



Is
Christian Morality Unique?

Parts One and Two

Michelle Nailon CSB

IS CHRISTIAN MORALITY UNIQUE?

Part 1

Michelle Nailon CSB



IS CHRISTIAN MORALITY UNIQUE?

Part 1

A Focus on Money, Power and Relationship

Michelle Nailon CSB

B.Arts, B.Theol., M. Theol., GradDipTheol.

Project Employment Inc.
Melbourne 2019

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

ISBN 978-0-9805603-3-6

Nihil Obstat: *Reverend Dr Cameron Forbes STL*
Diocesan Censor

Imprimatur: *Monsignor Greg Bennet MS STL VG*
Vicar General

Date: *8 March 2019*

The Nihil Obstat and Imprimatur are official declarations that a book or pamphlet is free of doctrinal or moral error. No implication is contained therein that those who have granted the Nihil obstat and Imprimatur agree with the contents, opinions or statements expressed. They do not necessarily signify that the work is approved as a basic text for catechetical instruction

Date: *8 March 2019*

Abstract:

Is Christian Morality Unique: Part 1? is an overview of the extent to which the three commandments of “Thou shalt not kill”, “Thou shalt not commit adultery” and “Thou shalt not steal” are threaded through the writings of St Paul and the Synoptic Gospels. These writings show an attempt to try to “idealise” the commandments. People are encouraged to avoid cruelty and violence and try to improve the self-determination of others. They are challenged to avoid fornication and impurity and instead nourish their own social relationships and those of other people. They are encouraged to give to others rather than steal from them.

At the end of Part 1 of this research project whether or not these encouragements show a “unique” morality on the part of Christianity remains an open question. Common sense and the teachings of other religions provide similarities to it. It is in Part 2 of this research project that the social structures of Christianity will be analysed in order to further test and demonstrate whether or not Christian morality really is “unique”.

Acknowledgements

Acknowledgement is given to the academics who have indirectly assisted in this project especially Noel Ryan SJ (R.I.P.) who was teaching Sociology of Religion at the United Faculty of Theology in Melbourne in the 1980's. Fr Ryan sparked an interest in the impact that Greek Philosophy has had, on western societies up till the present time.

Thanks is also given to four potential Supervisors (including three Professors) who at various times were prepared to help in the writing of a Ph D thesis. Unfortunately on each occasion there was a failure on my part to find the required second Supervisor

with a New Testament background. In retrospect, given the subject matter of the discussion that follows here, a question could be raised as to whether or not finding a second, New Testament Supervisor around Melbourne was possible anyway.

Acknowledgement is also given to the assistance of Biblical Scholars around Melbourne. These include teachers at Melbourne University, the United Faculty of Theology, Australian Catholic University and the University of Divinity who helped over the years by providing courses that covered both Old and New Testament Scripture studies.

Preface

*The following pages were started after four separate and unsuccessful attempts to find a second Supervisor for a thesis that could provide a “peer review” of a semiotic gospel analysis that is set out and discussed on the Reality Search web sites (cf. www.gospelsociology.org) Another “thesis,” titled *Is there a Critique of Greek Philosophy in the Gospel?* (available on these sites as well), was written and published as a response to an earlier, second Supervisor search. Some of the material in *Is There a Critique of Greek Philosophy in the Gospels?* has been developed further in the pages to follow. This developed material is mainly with regard to discussions on Matthew and Luke.*

*The question *Is there a Critique of Greek Philosophy in the Gospels?* was actually the trigger that gave rise to the whole Reality Search gospel analysis in the first place, quite some years ago now. The second question, being dealt with here, about the uniqueness of Christian morality, arose after the Reality Search analysis was compiled, formatted and set out in the Reality Search web sites. This same question about the uniqueness of Christian Morality also arose and was explored while doing further, post graduate gospel studies.*

It is expected that in Part Two of the present research project, there will again be a reliance on the Reality Search analysis as with “Is There a Critique of Greek Philosophy in the Gospels”, but in this case different examples from the analysis will be used. The ultimate aim in all these research endeavours has been to demonstrate that the semiotic Reality Search analysis of the gospels and Acts is in fact a credible one. Also, in wider contexts and social forums of the present day, this analysis should be able to help people towards a better understanding of the social structures behind differing, even conflicting societies, with their different and at times conflicting value systems.

The text of the Reality Search analysis has been based on the literal translation of Reverend Alfred Marshall, as found in The R.S.V. Interlinear Greek-English New Testament (1968). Permission for the use of this literal translation on the web sites has been obtained from the British Treasury. The major text of the analysis consists of a paraphrase (done by myself) that is based on Marshall’s translation and the Greek text.



Contents

PART ONE	LITERATURE SEARCH	
Chapter 1	A Problem and a Proposal	1
Chapter 2	A Critique of J. Fitzmyer’s article on Historical Critical Exegesis	8
Chapter 3	Paul’s Isolation of Three Key Social Commandments	16
Chapter 4	Paul’s Themes of Generosity, Self-Determination and Respect for the Body	23
	a. Introductory Letter of Thessalonians	23
	b. Letter to Philippians and Theme of Generosity	29
	c. Galatians and insistence on self-determination	36
	d. 1 Corinthians and Respect for the Body	43
Chapter 5	Paul’s Challenge to the “Spirit People” of Corinth	49
	a. Eschatological Approach to Marriage and Celibacy	50
	b. Difference between Paul and Greek Philosophy	57

Chapter 6	The Synoptic gospels: Continuing Paul’s Morality “Map”	68
	a. The Gospel of Mark – 70 AD	68
	b. The Gospel of Matthew (5:17-20, 10:5-15)	74
	c. Gospel of Luke (4:16-30, Acts 15)	99
Chapter 7	An “Official Policy” in Luke, Regarding “blood, fornication and strangling”	111
Chapter 8	The Passion, in the Synoptic Gospels and the Three Key Social Commandments	134
	a. Gospel of Mark and the Passion Narrative	143
	b. The Passion Narrative of the Gospel of Matthew	147
	c. The Passion Narrative in the Gospel of Luke	152
Chapter 9	Comparison with Other World Religions and Conclusion about “Uniqueness”	160
	Judaism	162
	Islam	164
	Taoism	167
	Hinduism	170
	Buddhism	171
	Conclusion about Uniqueness	172
	 Bibliography	 175

Introduction

The question “Is Christian Morality Unique?” raises further questions, namely how can one find an answer to this? There are a couple of obvious possibilities here. It may be possible to take a hard look at Christian communities and the “ethics” that they appear to be based upon. Or, a research project could go back to the acknowledged source texts of Christianity, that is, the gospels. Do the gospels put forward key values and a key approach to these that answer the question?

In a follow through here, a few further challenges come up. What about the background structure of the Christian communities themselves that are reflected through the gospel writers? And, what sort of discipline(s) would be needed to do an sociological analysis of these original gospel communities?

Inevitably the question of New Testament interpretation comes up here. If a credible type of answer is to be found to our leading question, then a “credible” approach is needed in a study of the primary source documents of Christianity. At present the dominant method of gospel interpretation is described as “Historical Critical Exegesis”.¹ This approach to interpretation involves an in-depth search of the history that lies behind a particular section of text. It also involves the translation and understanding of the original wording that is used by a writer. This Historical Critical Exegetical approach or “method” as it is called, is precise, clear-cut and is described as being “scientific”. It is described by the Catholic Pontifical

¹ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” *Origins*, Vol 23, n.29 (Washington: C.N.S., 1994) 500.

Biblical Commission, writing in 1993, as “the indispensable method for the scientific study of the meaning of ancient texts.”²

But, one has to note, the Commission also describes the “method” as “diachronic” (i.e. looking at one small section of text at a time). How does this fit with a “synchronic” overview that makes a “sweep” of a whole text (and indeed a number of whole texts). The Commission points out the value and need for a synchronic approach to Scripture as well. But, inevitably there is likely to be some sort of clash of disciplines here. Also, the credibility of a synchronic approach that is taken in Scripture interpretation would be automatically undermined by the apparently higher status given by the Commission to “historical critical exegesis”.

However, even with this duality in interpretation, it may be possible to isolate some values that were key to the approach taken by the first Christian, gospel-based communities? It may be possible to consider the approach early Christian writers took. These values could then be compared with those found in other world religions in order to clarify whether or not the value system of Christianity could be described as ‘unique’. It may in fact be found that it is not so much the “uniqueness” of these key values that characterise Christian morality after all. Rather it may be the basic social structures in which the key values are practised that mark off the Christian approach to morality as being truly “unique”.

In Part One of the research project to follow, an attempt will be made to explore whether or not there are “key” values in Christianity and what sort of approach has been taken towards them. Then in Part Two there will be an exploration of what sort of basic social structures have been set out in the gospels.

² Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 500.

These structures form the basis from which Christians practice their morality. At the same time during this research, what will be constantly kept in mind, is the tension and credibility factors that exist amongst the various approaches to gospel interpretation.

It is proposed in Chapter One to clarify an underlying “problem” of interpretation further with some explanation of what the “historical critical method” of interpretation entails and the status given to it by Scripture Scholars. An article on the same subject will be critiqued in Chapter Two to further explain the method and the constraints its dominance imposes on other, synchronic approaches to interpretation, especially it seems, to structural analysis. The article to be considered was written by one of the most famous proponents of the historical critical exegesis method, Joseph Fitzmyer. Fitzmyer was an editor of the *New Jerome Biblical Commentary*.³

In the Chapters to follow despite a critique being made of the Fitzmyer’s article and the method of “historical critical exegesis,” this approach will be used to “isolate” key morality values in the writings of Paul, Mark, Matthew, and Luke. Particular attention will be given to the writings of Paul. He wrote approximately twenty years after the life of Jesus Christ and about twenty years before the gospel of Mark was written.

⁴ Paul is considered to be the first Christian theologian and he largely shaped the emergence of the early church. Some consideration will be given to his influence on the writing of the synoptic gospels as well.

In Part Two of this research project, the question about the sociological structure of Christianity will be addressed. The approach used in this exploration will be the structural,

³ *The New Jerome Biblical Commentary*, R Brown, J.Fitzmyer, R. Murphy, editors (London: Chapman, 1989).

⁴ Holladay, *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament: Interpreting the Message and Meaning of Jesus Christ*, (Nashville:Abingdon Press, 2005) 382-3.

synchronic method of gospel interpretation called “semiotic analysis”. The analysis to be used here will help to uncover the distinctive uniqueness of the communities of the synoptic gospel writers. This semiotic analysis of the gospel texts in Part 2 will show that the basic social structure of Christianity is in fact a hybrid. As Paul himself said, it is based on both Judaism and Hellenism (cf. Eph. 2:1-19) . Christianity as such therefore contains the advantages of both types of societies. Both types of societies provide a framework for its morality. The analysis in Part 2 will also show however, that a Christian society can “tip” into the extremes of either of the societies that it is based upon. At least a positive factor about this is that given its hybrid base Christianity should have the resources to re-emerge in a more balanced way. The “lynch pin” that holds these two types of societies together is the “living authority” and ‘living word” which is found in the living person of Jesus Christ.

Part 2 beyond the scope of this present Part 1, deals with a problem facing the user of semiotic analysis. This is its apparent lack of credibility amongst Scriptural scholars. Because of such a “blockage” Part Two of this research project provides critique of “historical critical exegesis” based on the philosopher Gadamer and his book *Truth and Method*. Gadamer was highly critical of an over-reliance on “method” as such, in the pursuit of truth.⁵ On the one hand he barely mentions “historical critical exegesis” and Scriptural interpretation in *Truth and Method*. But he demands a wider approach to be taken in the interpretation of any text so that interpretation reaches beyond history and language. In doing this he points out that the significance of history for instance can only be determined with the passage of time. He also points out that language is “alive” and thus any one ‘definitive’ interpretation of wording has to be inaccurate.

⁵ Hans-Georg Gadamer, *Truth and Method* (London: Bloomsbury,2013) (First published 1975).

The background of Gadamer's demand for a wider approach to interpretation will be used Part Two to justify the further exploration of the hybrid nature of Christianity. In particular this will be explored in the gospel of John. Also this further study will explore the on-going, pivotal role of the living person of Jesus Christ.

In the Part Three of this overall research project some consideration will be given to the implications of Christianity's unique structural background which determines the uniqueness of its morality. In this Implications section there will be observations of the dilemma of the Catholic Church that took place after the Vatican II Council in the 1960's. It is suggested that so much of this upset could be described as a shift that took place within the Catholic Church. It moved being a law-dominated type of society (cf. Judaism) into the more rationalised approach of Hellenism?

In the Implications Section of Part Three, the presence, status and role of Religious Life will be briefly considered. The three key social values, isolated and elaborated upon in Part One, in fact have parallels to the vows of poverty, chastity and obedience that are taken by members of a Religious Order. Thus, given the key roles these values have in Christianity, the vows taken by Religious place them at the very heart of the church. Religious are therefore challenged to "mirror" the role of the Church in the world. They should pose an "extreme form" of the service that the gospels challenge both Christians and indeed industry itself to take on. As regards industry. The gospel morality challenges industry to empower people's self-determination. It challenges industry to strengthen people's social support systems. It challenges industry to provide for material necessities. All these activities come under the headings of power, relationship and money. The challenge to service extends beyond the family and the extended family to 'all the world'.

PART ONE

A Literature Search Using Historical Critical Exegesis

Chapter One a Problem and a Proposal

A Problem

Reference was made in the Introduction to an on-going problem of interpretation in this research project. Diachronic and synchronic approaches to gospel interpretation involve two different disciplines. The diachronic approach requires historical research into “historical facts” and a clarification of the meaning of wording that is used in a text of the gospel. A synchronic approach on the other hand takes a wider and more literary view of a text, such as the interplay of wording and an underlying line of logic that undergirds the text.

The first approach of historical critical exegesis requires a student or article writer to cover such aspects as the historical/social situation of the original writer, the form of the text and parallels with texts elsewhere. It also involves searching out the authenticity of the text being studied - its purpose, influences from outside etc. Also again, it requires consideration of the dates and credibility of early manuscripts containing the text being studied. The diachronic approach of historical critical exegesis involves study of one small section of text at a time.

A ‘synchronic’ approach to interpretation is more akin to literary appreciation. It allows the view that there is no one ‘correct’ interpretation of a text. Rather, the imagery, tone, rhetoric and structure of the whole all play a part in interpretation. For instance, people in the decades after the life of Jesus, would have recalled stories about him for an illiterate audience who were sitting around and possibly working with their hands. In such a situation the ‘performer’ recounting the stories was likely to be using literary devices in common use at the time. Such devices would include what is called inverted circles or “chiasms”. Chiasmus involves the arrangement of words, grammatical constructions or concepts (including stories) into what is called an inverted circle (cf. ABCDCBA). This literary ‘construction’ would allow a performer to then recall stories in a sequence that would be easier to remember. In the first century CE the use of chiasmus in story-telling was common and it was basic to re-telling the stories of Homer. These days one of the problems regarding interpretation arises if someone goes looking for chiasmus in gospel texts (and finds it). It is unlikely that the parallels of possible paragraphs would be accepted by either an examiner or editor. This approach is not considered to be “scientific” enough. Rather it is classed as “conjecture”.

In the paragraphs to follow here, four examples are given from the actual experiences when a “clash” along these lines occurred with examiners and potential editors.

1. In the description of a possible “inverted circle” which paired two paragraphs, a link was made between a donkey carrying Jesus in the gospel of Mark and Simon of Cyrene carrying the cross of Jesus. In pointing out such a pair (along with a wider context of pairs) it was considered that this parallel would have been sufficient to help a performer recall the stories and also the key point that was common to both of them. However the examiner disagreed.

2. In the gospel of John, when providing the description of a possible inverted circle of water images, a parallel was made between Jesus asking a Samaritan woman for a drink of water and Jesus calling out “I thirst” on the cross. Again an examiner disagreed. The examiner said that in the case of the meeting with the Samaritan woman, Jesus did not explicitly say “I thirst”.

3. On another occasion when some possible inverted circles were included in a gospel analysis, the editor of a journal stated that ‘Inverted circles are out of fashion and it is unlikely any editor would be interested in publishing something about them.’ One would have thought it important to consider whether or not inverted circles were “out of fashion” when the gospel stories were being re-told and later written down!

4. In yet another instance of an inverted circle (or chiasm) being downgraded is as follows. In the gospel of Mark, the section about the Passion of Jesus extends from Mark 10:31 to Mark 16:8. This passage contains thirteen sets of paragraph pairs with “paragraph hooks” that show responses to Jesus. The central paragraph here is about a woman who anoints the feet of Jesus. The story is a key part of the gospel story because it was Jesus’ acceptance of the woman’s remorse that, according to the text’s construction, triggered the decision of Judas to betray Jesus. In an article written for a publication that focussed on feminist interpretations of the gospels, the inverted circle was discussed to show how it highlighted the woman’s action, especially as Jesus responded to her in turn. Jesus said “Wherever the gospel is proclaimed in all the world, what this woman did will be re-told as a memorial of her.” (cf. Mk 14:1-9). But the article was not accepted. The reviewers said that they liked the article but ‘unfortunately’ it was based on “conjecture”.

Again, one has to wonder here how “out of fashion” these chiasmic literary constructions were with the original story-tellers?” We know that inverted circles or “chiasmic structures”

are found throughout established works of literature in vogue during the first century CE.¹ The works of Homer are an example of this. In the 2nd Century BCE Cicero wrote to his friend saying, “I’ll be like Homer and put the cart before the horse.”² One is also tempted to wonder how acceptable to present-day editors, would be the approaches that were taken to interpretation by the original gospel writers. Would Paul, the gospel writers and for that matter Jesus himself, have met the standards of today’s historical critical exegetes? It appears that what fits in with the original performance of the text, in the original communities of the gospels, does not fit with present-day Biblical interpretation.

Further, one needs to ask to what extent it makes sense, that one type of discipline, namely the diachronic, Historical Critical Exegesis method of interpretation, should be used to discern the merits of a quite different, synchronic approach to the gospels. In particular this question applies to the synchronic approach of the structural analysis which is called “semiotic analysis”.³

The biblical scholar Sandra Schneiders, in her book *The Revelatory Text: Interpreting the New Testament as Sacred Scripture* has said that New Testament Studies needs a hermeneutic, that is, a framework for understanding.⁴ It appears that as yet, there is an impasse about conflicting

¹ Cedric H. Whitman, *Homer and the Heroic Tradition* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1958). 97.

² Cicero, *Letters to Atticus* ed. T. Page and W. Rouse, Trans. B. Winstedt (London: William Heineman, 1919)

http://archive.org/stream/letterstoatticus01ciceuoft/letterstoatticus01ciceuoft_djvu.txt

³ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 504.

⁴ Cf. Schneiders, Sandra. *The Revelatory Text: Interpreting the New Testament as Sacred Scripture*. 2nd ed. Collegeville: A Michael Glazier Book, 1999.

approaches to the gospel text and this impasse has still not been resolved.⁵

The conflict that exists between diachronic and synchronic approaches to Scripture are not so evident in some of the definitions of these approaches (other than semiotic analysis) that are put forward by the Catholic Pontifical Commission. For instance the Commission describes “narrative criticism” as a synchronic approach to interpretation.⁶ In the use of this approach, for example in Francis Moloney’s book *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist* an overview of the whole gospel is made according to narrative criticism. At the same time there is an allowance for detailed analysis of the text cf. historical critical exegesis.⁷ A conflict in approaches is not so apparent here. Another example of a synchronic interpretation given by the Commission is “rhetorical analysis” also described by the Commission as a synchronic approach.⁸ This method has been further developed by Vernon Robbins into “socio-rhetorical” criticism.⁹ As with narrative criticism, rhetorical criticism also allows for a detailed “diachronic” analysis of the text. In fact socio-rhetorical criticism, is described as an extension of historical critical exegesis.¹⁰ Thus it is less likely to be found as a contradiction to this.

⁵ Schneiders, *The Revelatory Text: Interpreting the New Testament as Sacred Scripture*, 22-23.

⁶ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 503.

⁷ Moloney, Francis, J. *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, evangelist* Peabody, Massachusetts, Hendrickson Publishers 2004.

⁸ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 502-3.

⁹ Vernon K. Robbins, *Jesus the Teacher: A Socio-Rhetorical Interpretation of Mark* (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1984,

¹⁰ Cf. Stephen Barton, “Historical Criticism and Social-Scientific Perspectives,” *Hearing the New Testament: Strategies for Interpretation*, Joel Green, ed. (Grand Rapids, Michigan, and Carlisle: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co. and The Paternoster Press, 1995).

But not all synchronic approaches described by the Commission sit so easily with historical critical exegesis. The case in point which is to be focussed upon in Part II in this research project is structural/semiotic analysis. This has a focus on the wording and “environment” of the text alone. In this sense it does not look outside the text itself. However, as the Commission points out it needs to take the general historical situation of the writers into account.¹¹

Not only does semiotic analysis apparently contradict the approach of historical critical exegesis. There is also some conflict with the synchronic approach of narrative criticism. For instance an examiner who favours narrative criticism would expect the underlying story to flow through the sequence of the text from one chapter and verse into the next. But a semiotician exploring inverted circles in the structure of a text, could have the paragraphing structure of the text as moving from the first paragraph of a section, paired with the last one, then the second paragraph paired with the second last one etc. Technically there may still be a flow-on in the overall narrative as its underlying structure “comes backwards”. But a narrative critic would have to accept the possibility of this paragraph inversion in the first place and they would not be looking for this.

Given the biases in interpretation that exist, it is not surprising therefore that a ‘warning’ by an editor should be given as mentioned above, that a writer is unlikely to find a publisher for material about inverted circles. These are “out of fashion”. Odd but practical advice. But one asks the question. “How can a literary device in use before and after gospel stories were written down be “out of fashion?” But it seems such a question is almost irrelevant in present-day scholarship.

¹¹ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 504.

A Proposal

The above discussion may lead one to think that the “Historical Critical Method of Exegesis” cannot be ‘trusted’ to uncover every level of interpretation in the texts of the New Testament. True. But since the use of this method of interpretation in recent decades, has led to great discoveries statements about the “method” made by the Catholic Pontifical Commission in “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church” need to be taken on board. The Commission says. “The historical-critical method is the indispensable method for the scientific study of the meaning of ancient texts.”¹²



¹² Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 500.

Chapter Two

A Critique of J. Fitzmyer's article on Historical Critical Exegesis

Joseph Fitzmyer's article "Historical Criticism: its role in biblical Interpretation and Church Life" lauds Historical Critical Exegesis.¹³ But Fitzmyer's praise of the method also shows up some of the problems of this dominant method being used in the interpretation of Scripture. For instance he insists that ".the historical method is per se neutral."¹⁴ But, as the philosopher Gadamer has pointed out in his book *Truth and Method*, any "method" of research is designed and takes place in the wider, historical and social context of a researcher.¹⁵ It is in this wider context that research questions are formulated. Such questions will "steer" the course of the research.¹⁶ Therefore, research and method are a sub-section and minor part of an overall historical situation. In this sense a "method" as such cannot be neutral.

In the article it appears Fitzmyer does not see "the method" in this way. On one hand he refers to presuppositions taken by those in the past who attacked Christianity using the "method." He also refers to presuppositions that are taken in the present day by scholars who use the method in a spirit of faith. But he appears to assume presuppositions can be either "taken on

¹³ Joseph A. Fitzmyer, "Historical Criticism: its role in Biblical Interpretation and Church Life", *Theological Studies* 56 (Baltimore: Theological Studies Inc. 1989), 244-259.

¹⁴ Joseph A. Fitzmyer, "Historical Criticism: its role in Biblical Interpretation and Church Life", 255.

¹⁵ Hans-Georg Gadamer, *Truth and Method* cf. 579.

¹⁶ Cf. Gadamer, *Truth and Method* 86-7.

board” or deliberately avoided. He says “Because the historical critical method is per neutral, it can be used with such faith presuppositions.”¹⁷ Thus because he appears to assume presuppositions are something one can choose or reject they, and the whole cultural milieu that would influence such a choice, are thereby made secondary to the “method”. Fitzmyer talks of new approaches to interpretation saying, “None of them is a substitute for that fundamental approach (of historical critical exegesis) – nor can they be allowed to replace it.”¹⁸

In making the above statement he again appears to overlook the fact that the overall social context in which a researcher lives and works is largely beyond his or her control. He also appears to overlook a fact about the “truths” portrayed by a society that is heavily dependent upon allegory and metaphor in its way of communicating. The texts of such a society are not likely to be understood, when the discipline of historical critical exegesis is the final arbitrator of whether or not an interpretation of such texts is valid.

It seems Fitzmyer fails to see his own “presuppositions” or rather pre-judgments in this discussion. Such a pre-judgment is his assumption that “the method” is basic and other approaches to the Scriptures are only refinements of it. To reinforce his position he uses a quote from Pope Pius XII.

For Pius XII realised that the “spiritual sense” of Scripture, clearly intended by God could not be something other than the “literal meaning of the words, intended and expressed by the sacred writer” (Fitzmyer goes on) this is precisely

¹⁷ Fitzmyer, “Historical Criticism and its role in Biblical Interpretation and church Life,” 255.

¹⁸ Fitzmyer, “Historical Criticism and its role in Biblical Interpretation and church Life,” 255.

what the properly oriented use of the historical critical method can and does achieve...¹⁹

On the one hand the quote from Pius XII does appear to support a focus on the meaning of words as stressed in historical critical exegesis. But, strictly speaking, the quote does not take into account the wide range of literary devices used by writers of Scripture. What about the use of irony when the chief priests poked fun at the “kingdom” of Jesus while their own Temple in Jerusalem, around the time of Mark’s writing, was being destroyed ((Mk 15:32)? What about the hyperbole used by Jesus in Matthew cf. “ If your right eye causes you to stumble pluck it out.” (Mt 5:29)? What about the metaphors used in a description of hell (Mt 13:60)? What about the use of parables etc.? One also wonders about the context in which Pius XII made the statement about “the literal meaning of words”.

In the context of the discussion above in Chapter One, - about rejection of semiotic analysis, it is an odd thing that a “method” that claims to be based upon historical investigation downplays the meaning of texts that were written with literary devices in common use at the time.

Fitzmyer uses the authority of the Church to support his view about the primacy of the Historical Critical Method. He refers to the writings of Pius XII and he also refers to writings of the Catholic Pontifical Biblical Commission..²⁰ These quoted writings of the Commission pre-date Fitzmyer’s article of 1989. However a later statement was produced by the

¹⁹ Fitzmyer, “Historical Criticism and its role in Biblical Interpretation and church Life,” 256.

²⁰ Biblical Commission, “On the Historical Truth of the Gospels” appendix A *Christological Catechism: New Testament Answers* (New York: Hamsey, N.J., Paulist, 1982) 97-140.

Commission in 1993, that is, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church”.

The position of the Commission in 1993 takes in a wider view of interpretation. This wider view would acknowledge that scholars have given up trying to rediscover the historical Jesus in the gospels.²¹ The statement reflects a realisation that there is a separation between the gospel texts and what actually went on in the life of Jesus. Thus the gospels not only recount the historical life of Jesus. They are also an interpretation of it. Fitzmyer himself concedes this to some extent. He says that historical critical exegesis can assist in sorting out differences between what happened at the time of Jesus and what was going on with later writers.²² But one also wonders here if he thinks the method is so effective in sorting out the “differences” that it can in fact reveal the historical Jesus.

Regardless, an interpretation of the life of Jesus, written towards the end of the first century CE could also include a “metaphoric” interpretation of the life of Jesus. For instance one could wonder if the gospels are setting up some sort of overall, unified “paradigm” at the back of or undergirding their texts in order to present the nature of the Kingdom of Christ. The gospels claim this has been introduced. Such an extended metaphor or “paradigm” could be set out in the underlying structure of the texts. Thus gospel structures could present, as it were, a “constitutions” for the Church as the “Kingdom” of Christ, in a way similar to that of Plato’s *Republic* and the large number of city constitutions that were collected by Aristotle.²³

²¹ Schweitzer, Albert. *Quest for the Historical Jesus*, translated by William Montgomery. Great Britain: A and C Black Ltd, 1906.

²² Fitzmyer, “Historical Criticism: its role in Biblical Interpretation and Church Life”, 252.

²³ Aristotle, *Politics and Athenian Constitution*, edited and translated by John Warrington (London, J.M.Dent, E.P. Dutton, 1959)

To explore the possibility of a structural paradigm, one would need to rely upon other methods of interpretation of the gospels besides that of historical critical exegesis. Also, alternative method or methods would need to have more status than “only” being a refinement of the Historical Critical Method which is how Fitzmyer sees them.

As regards Fitzmyer’s article “Historical Criticism: its role in Biblical Interpretation and Church Life.” In 1993, four years after the article’s publication (1989) and as alluded to above, the Catholic Pontifical Biblical Commission published its own article on the subject - “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church.” Fitzmyer then wrote a commentary on this statement.²⁴ It appears he was not complementary about the Commission’s endorsement of structural/semiotic analysis. In fact in one of his notes he commented about semioticians “pulling a rabbit out of a hat” He contrasted their approach with the reliability of Historical Critical Exegesis.²⁵

In its statement the Commission admitted there are limitations to historical critical exegesis or “the method”. In this sense, it was qualifying Fitzmyer’s uncritical support of it. In fact there is a peculiar parallel between the title of Fitzmyer’s article “Historical Criticism: its role in Biblical Interpretation and Church Life” (1989) and the title of the Commission’s statement. “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church.” (1993). One wonders if the Commission was deliberately qualifying Fitzmyer’s article.

A few reflections about the historical background of the Church at the time may be of help here. The head of the Commission was Cardinal Ratzinger. Ratzinger was

²⁴ Cf. Joseph A Fitzmyer, *The Biblical Commission’s Document “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church”: text and commentary* (Roma: Editrice Pontificio Istituto Biblico, 1995)

²⁵ Fitzmyer *The Biblical Commission’s Document “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church”: text and commentary*

nicknamed by sections of the Church at the time as “the Rottweiler”. This was because, on behalf of Pope John Paul II, he was highly critical of tendencies within the Church to tip into the extremes of a Communist or a totalitarian type of philosophy. John Paul, who had had personal experience of the extremes of both Nazism and Communism in Poland, was hyper-sensitive about these. Apparently he was also an admirer of Gadamer’s criticisms of over-reliance on “method”. When Gadamer died in 2002 John Paul II sent a condolence telegram to his family.²⁶

In the overall context of the Commission’s statement, some of this deals with fundamentalism and it also has reference to Gadamer’s “philosophical hermeneutics”.. So there was an attempt to clarify questions about interpretation in general, beyond that of diachronic and synchronic approaches. But at least it attempted to clear up this difference.

The Commission said that the Historical Critical Exegetical method of Scriptural interpretation is, by its nature, diachronic. It said there needs to be further exploration of synchronic approaches to Scriptural interpretation. Such approaches would include narrative analysis, rhetorical analysis and structural analysis. The Commission also urged the exploration of sociological and other approaches to the gospels.²⁷

In this way “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church” raises the status of “synchronic” approaches to Scripture such as structural/semiotic analysis. Thus the status of such an approach to Scripture was raised from being a “refinement” of

²⁶ Chris Lawn, *Gadamer: a Guide for the Perplexed* (London: Continuum, 2006), 17.

²⁷ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 504

the the historical critical method, to being a necessary and complementary approach to it.²⁸

However at the same time Commission continued to endorse ‘the historical critical method of exegesis’ as being basic to Scriptural interpretation. To repeat the quote used above and to extend this, .

The historical-critical method is the indispensable method for the scientific study of the meaning of ancient texts.””Holy Scripture.....its proper understanding not only admits the use of the method but actually requires it.²⁹

With this stated position the status given to an approach such as semiotic analysis was, in a sense, qualified. In this sense there appears to be some endorsement of Fitzmyer’s article of 1989, when he says that whatever “refinements” may be used, it must be the method of historical criticism that has the final say as to whether or not an interpretation of Scripture is valid
30

The Commission warns that the findings of semiotic analysis should be in accord with a historically correct background to the text. For a semiotician this proviso may simply mean that it is necessary to use common sense here. The semiotician may not necessarily see this as “downgrading” structural/semiotic analysis. But for a historical critical exegete, who is an examiner or editor the proviso could be used to reinforce their own bias against semiotic analysis.

The problem that emerges here from the overall statement of the Commission is that a diachronic method of interpretation is

²⁸ Cf. Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 504

²⁹ Biblical Commission “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 500.

³⁰ Cf. Fitzmyer, “Historical Criticism and its role in Biblical Interpretation and church Life,” 255.

not the same as a synchronic method of interpretation. But in practice, in academic circles, the established diachronic method is still used to judge a synchronic approach to interpretation. Therefore when examiners mark papers or editors choose material for publication, the final arbitrator of the quality of an interpretation finishes up being the diachronic approach to Scripture.

This comes back to the question of allegory. To what extent is an allegorical exploration of a text accepted in academic circles? It is an irony that Plato, arguably the originator of the rationalistic approach in Western philosophy and academia, fell back himself on the use of myth in his arguments against sophists.³¹ Even he found that rationalism, like the historical critical method, can only go so far.

Moving on. Whatever about the above arguments about the “best” method of approaching Scripture, in the chapters immediately to follow here, in this Part One of *Is Christianity Morality Unique?* it is mainly the historical critical method that will be used for interpretation. It will be later on, in Part II of this research project, that the basis and indeed credibility of “the Historical Critical Exegetical method” as such will be discussed at length. An alternative or at least complementary approach to interpretation will be used and assessed.

In this Part One of *Is Christianity Morality Unique?* an effort will be made to try to isolate out from New Testament texts, the key moral values that were carried into the formation of early Christianity. The approach to these values that evolved in those early years will also be considered.

³¹ Gadamer, *Truth and Method* 352

Chapter Three

Paul's Isolation of Three Key Social Commandments

Historical critical exegesis will be used in the next few chapters. A major aim here is to examine the way in which Paul, the first Christian theologian “shaped the map” of Christian morality. Later this same method of interpretation will be used to explore how the synoptic writers, following on from Paul, continued on with the morality “map” that he had drafted. Paul was preaching and writing in the 50’s CE,³². This was about twenty years after the death of Jesus and about twenty years before the gospel of Mark was written around 70 CE. It was at this time that Jerusalem and its Temple was being destroyed by the army of the Roman Empire.³³ In this Chapter Three and then in Chapters Four and Five, areas of Paul’s writing on key morality issues will be singled out and considered. The overview of Paul’s writing will include his letters to the Thessalonians, Philippians, Corinthians, Galatians and Romans. Also Paul’s challenge to the “spirit people” of Corinth and the implications of this will be given special emphasis.

As one could expect, a “map of morality” re-designed from the Judaic one by Paul the Pharisee, would put the Commandments of Moses in a central position. The Decalogue or Ten Commandments as they are known would therefore be an

³² B. Ehrman “Paul as pastor,” *Yale Bible Studies Series* (New Haven, USA: Yale university) https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pMVatCd_1xM [accessed march 2016].

³³ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, evangelist* ix.

obvious starting point for Paul. For clarity and as a re-cap, the Ten Commandments as set out in the traditional “Penny Catechism” of the Catholic Church are as follows:

I am the Lord thy God

1. Thou shalt not have strange gods before me
2. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain
3. Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath Day
4. Honour thy father and thy mother
5. Thou shalt not kill
6. Thou shalt not commit adultery
7. Thou shalt not steal
8. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour
9. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s wife
10. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s goods ³⁴

The themes of “money, power and sex” are reflected by the three social commandments of “Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not kill and Thou shalt not commit adultery” (cf. Mk 10:19). Note that these commandments are numbers seven, five and six in the Catholic list above.

The themes of money, power and sex are continually touched upon in the letters of Paul but in a way that is rarely explicitly noticeable. For instance he would change around their order of sequence. Paul was avoiding legalism. Thus he could be talking about donations, self-determination and relationship or parallel topics even while these three commandments and his interpretation of them underlie his thinking. Thus on the one

³⁴ Plenary Council, *Catechism: Issued with Episcopal Authority for General Use in Australia* (Melbourne: Australian Catholic Truth Society, 1937) 28.

hand the three commandments are not being explicitly mentioned. But an indirect elaboration of them is being made.

The way in which these commandments are constantly, but indirectly referred to can be seen in the following six examples:

1. In the letter to the Philippians Paul warns against people who go against the commandments. He says “Their end is destruction, their god is the belly, and they glory in their shame.” (Phil 3:19)³⁵ Metaphorically, these parallel the three key commandments mentioned above, that is, “Thou shalt not kill” (in terms of destroying their own destiny), “Thou shalt not steal” (in terms of giving priority to their own material benefits), “Thou shalt not commit adultery” (in terms of their shameful conduct).

2. In the first section of the letter to the Corinthians, 1 Cor. 1:1-2:13, Paul has pointed out the example of his own life in facing opposition, rough treatment and insults (2:2-3). An indirect reference is thus made here to “Thou shalt not kill”. He also says he has avoided delusion, immorality or deception (2:3) (cf. Thou shalt not commit adultery). He has not sought flattery or money (2:5) (cf. Thou shalt not steal) .

3. In 1 Cor. 4:8 Paul said the Corinthians as “freedmen” and in such newly found freedom, social security and wealth in Corinth, were themselves ‘filled, rich and like Kings’. Thus there is an echo here of their satisfactions in the area of social relationships, wealth and power. Paul then contrasts the situation and attitude of these wealthy Corinthians with the poverty, homelessness and weakness that has been deliberately taken on by the apostles of Jesus (1 Cor. 4:9-13).

³⁵ *Ignatius Catholic Study Bible: New Testament*. Intro. Comm. Schott Hahn and Curtis Mitch, Catholic Edition (San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 2001).

Again the themes of poverty, aloneness and powerlessness are raised.

4. In 1 Cor. 5:11 Paul lists vices of people (even so-called brothers). He says they could be “guilty of immorality or greed, or be an idolater, reviler, drunkard or robber.” He also says because of their bad influence these people should be avoided. Apart from idolatry (worship of other gods), it appears the vices he lists here are again, failings in the areas of sex, money or power. The first two vices of “immorality or greed” have a fairly obvious connection to the sixth and seventh commandments. The last three “vices” on the list of such ‘polluted’ people, that is, “reviler, drunkard or robber” actually fall into the category of the fifth commandment of “Thou shalt not kill”. How so? These vices all perpetuate abuse. They include verbal abuse, self abuse through drinking or robbery with violence. As regards this latter vice, in standard translations of the text, it is not immediately obvious that it falls into the category of the fifth commandment.³⁶ For instance the word “robbers nowadays does not have the same connotation of violence as the word “rapacious” which is the RSV’s literal translation of the Greek word used by Paul, that is, ἄρπαξ. Nor are translation of this word ἄρπαξ into “robber” as strong as Matthew’s use of this same word when he talks of “ravenous wolves” (Mtt 7:15). But in the literal translation of the word, Paul the moralist map-maker implies violence here. Thus in his list of vices here, he is keeping to the three categories of social sins relating to sex, money and power. Also as in some of his other references to these commandments he changes around their order while extending the range of words used to describe them.

5. Later on in 1 Cor. 6:9-10 Paul again sketches out a shadow of the three key social sins (and implicitly their

³⁶ *The Holy Bible: Old and New Testaments*, RSV Catholic Edition (London: Nelson, 1966).

reversal) cf. “Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither the immoral, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, not catamites, sodomites, nor thieves, nor the greedy, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor (violent) robbers will inherit the kingdom of God.” In such a list as with other lists, Paul also includes idolatry. He knew he needed to deal with this particular failure amongst Gentile converts at length and in particular the Corinthians. In dealing with idolatry a special focus and approach would be needed and Paul takes this in 1 Corinthians (to be discussed further). But in the above list of vices he still groups the three key social sins together

In 1 Cor. 6:9-10, Paul starts with sins against chastity (“neither the immoral,... adulterers, catamites, sodomites”). Then he lists sins related to theft and greed (“nor thieves nor the greedy”). Then he lists sins of violence, including self-abuse and abuse of others (“drunkards, revilers and the ‘rapacious’ cf. ἄρπαξ”).³⁷

6. In his letter to the Romans Paul challenges his readers/auditors.

You then who teach others, will you not teach yourself? While you preach against stealing, do you steal? You who say that one must not commit adultery, do you commit adultery?

(Rom. 2:21-23)

In this context the first question ties in with education and helping people’s self-determination (cf. “Thou shalt not kill”). The link-ins with “thou shalt not steal or commit adultery” and their connection with the seventh and sixth commandments are more obvious.

³⁷ C. G. Kruse, “Virtues and Vices,” *Dictionary of Paul and his letters: a Compendium of Contemporary Biblical Scholarship*, ed. Gerald F. Hawthorne and Ralph P. Martin (Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press).

7. In Romans 13:9 Paul mentions the three commandments, this time explicitly, that is, “You shalt not commit adultery. You shalt not kill. You shall not steal.”

8. The letter to Titus, apparently from Paul, also reflects this sort of focus. The letter begins with a salutation by Paul. However the scholar Holladay says this letter to Titus (between 70-90 CE) was probably written after Paul’s death.³⁸ Yet even so, one finds that an “isolation” of the three social commandments is being carried forward. Thus the letter shows that character traits required by these commandments are incorporated into the range of qualities expected of a church leader....

”he must be irreproachable, never an arrogant or hot-tempered man, nor a heavy drinker or violent, nor out to make money: but a man who is hospitable and a friend of all that is good....” (Titus: 1:7-8).

The wider context in which Paul presents this “thread” of the three key commandments will be discussed in pages to follow. According to David Horrell in his *An Introduction to the Study of Paul* even though there may not be a “story” as such in Paul’s letters, there is in fact a “narrative” which appears to underpin his varied statements and arguments on specific topics.^{39,} In this sense he develops his theology across his letters. This includes his moral theology and his continued focus upon the three key social commandments. .

One of the ways in which Paul develops his moral theology is to put focus on the need for moral behavior as such. He appears to put particular focus on one or other of these three

³⁸ Cf. Holladay *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament*: 382-3.

³⁹ David G. Horrell, *An Introduction to the Study of Paul*, 2nd ed. (New York: T&T Clark, 2006), 58.

key social values in a particular letter. In his letter to the Thessalonians, arguably his first letter, he introduces the need to work at morality and the imitation of Christ.⁴⁰ In Philippians there is special emphasis on the generosity that these people showed towards himself and thus their “reversal” of the commandment “Thou shalt not steal”. In Galatians Paul stresses the importance of self-determination. In this case, such a theme echoes the meaning behind “Thou shalt not kill”. In 1 Corinthians the theme of the body and relationship permeates this letter (cf. “Thou shalt not commit adultery”) In the case of 1 Corinthians, when he is dealing with the theme of the body, Paul also confronts the “spirit people” and their tendency towards self-worship because of the Stoic idea that they have been adopting. This is the notion that people automatically possess a “divine spark” which they carry on beyond death.⁴¹ Paul’s confrontation with this Stoic idea brings up his support of the first commandment of the Jewish Decalogue, that is, “Thou shalt not have strange Gods before me.” (Exodus 20:3).



⁴⁰ Holladay, *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament...* 382-3.

⁴¹ Marcus Aurelius, (Emperor of Rome 121-180) *The Golden Book of Marcus Aurelius*, translated by Meric Casaubon (London: J.M.Dent, 1906)

Chapter Four

Paul's Themes of Generosity, Self-Determination and Respect for the Body

a. The Introductory Letter of Thessalonians

Paul's letter to the Thessalonians is possibly his first letter. He does not necessarily have a focus on one or all of the social commandments mentioned above. However this letter does put the pursuit of virtues associated with these commandments into an "end-game" context. Observing them is required for a following of Jesus and a share in the resurrection of Jesus.

It is generally agreed that this letter of 1 Thessalonians was written by Paul.⁴² The letter is complete in itself although some scholars believe there was an earlier letter that has been fitted into the text and it can be found in 2:13-4:2. If such was the case the section of 1:1-2:12 as we have it now, was originally followed by 4:3 to the end of the letter.⁴³ The earlier section of the letter (if it is earlier) talks about how Timothy has visited the Christian community at Thessalonica in the place of Paul. He has brought back the good news that the people there are continuing on with his teachings about faith and love (1 Thess.3:6). However it should be noted here is an omission of the word "hope". In ordinary parlance faith, hope and love are mentioned together. But it appears that Paul

⁴² J. Albert Harrill, *Paul the Apostle: His Life and Legacy in their Roman Context*. (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012), 14.

⁴³ Earl J. Richard *First and Second Thessalonians*. Vol 11 Sacra Pagina (Collegeville: The Liturgical Press, 1995), 249-267

needs to deal with the lack of hope in Thessalonica in particular and he does this in the "later" section of the letter. He crystallises his thoughts about it in 1 Thess. 4:13-18.

What was the historical background of Thessalonica and its place in the Roman Empire? It was a city that cultivated its friendship with the Romans, both in the past and into the future. They remained loyal to Octavius at the battle Philippi (42 BCE) and consequently Thessalonica became a "free" city (cf. Acts 17:5-6).⁴⁴ As a Hellenistic city it therefore had a wide range of religions and cults and these included worship of the Roman Emperor.⁴⁵

In his letter to the Christian community there, Paul praises the people for their responsiveness to his message and their goodwill (c f 2:13). At the same time, he recognises that they have been facing pressure from their neighbours, acquaintances and possibly family members, because of the new behaviour they have now adopted as Christians.⁴⁶ Paul talks of himself suffering the same sort of treatment as they have suffering from their countrymen. (2:14)⁴⁷

The general format of 1 Thessalonians shows that Paul treats these people as being immersed in Greek culture. Thus his writing is structured on standard Greek letter-writing with a friendly greeting (1:1) and affectionate farewell (5:28).⁴⁸ He

⁴⁴ J. Terence Forestell, "The Letters to the Thessalonians" in *Jerome Biblical Commentary*, ed. Raymond E. Brown et al. (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1968), 227.

⁴⁵ Forestell, "The Letters to the Thessalonians, 227."

⁴⁶ Edward Adams "First Century Models for Paul's churches: Selected Scholarly Developments since Meeks" *After the first Urban Christians: The Social-Scientific Study of Pauline Christianity Twenty-five Years Later* Edited by Todd Still and David Horrell (T. and T.Clark International 2009), 61

⁴⁷ *The Jerusalem Bible: New Testament*, Gen. Ed. Alexander Jones (London: Darton, Longman & Todd, 1967).

⁴⁸ G. H. R. Horsley and Stephen Llewelyn, *New Documents Illustrating Early Christianity: A Review of the Greek Inscriptions and Papyri Published in 1977*

also shows that as the leader of the community he has a relationship with these people. He is trying to retain this bond. The scholar Terence Forestell notes that Paul uses the word "brothers" as a term of Christian endearment twenty-one times in the letter.⁴⁹ His letter to the Thessalonians also echoes writings of the time such as that of a "protreptic" letter.⁵⁰ A protreptic letter shows how new members of a Philosophical school were expected to adopt the new and specific types of behaviour associated with that school. Such a letter would also help community solidarity.⁵¹ Usually a caring solicitude would be shown in a protreptic letter in order to help newcomers adapt and keep to the new and adopted lifestyle.⁵² Thessalonians, with their Greek culture, would have been familiar with the practice of moulding people's behaviour. Also, it was a standard practice for members of an association at the time, to clarify their commonly shared values. At the practical level this would be something essential in the practice of ancient trade.⁵³

In the letter it appears that, possibly because of feedback from Timothy (Paul's co-worker), the Thessalonian community had been having problems in particular with the Christian prohibition against fornication (4:3). Fornication was a practice that was intrinsic to some of the worship cults where there was Temple prostitution.⁵⁴ Apparently at least some

(North Ryde, NSW: Ancient History Documentary Research Centre Macquarie University, 1981), 61-63.

⁴⁹ Forestell, "The Letters to the Thessalonians," 227.

⁵⁰ Neil Elliot and Mark Reasoner, eds. *Documents and Images for the Study of Paul* (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 2011) 68.

⁵¹ Elliot *Documents and Images for the Study of Paul*, 68.

⁵² Elliot *Documents and Images for the Study of Paul*, 69.

⁵³ Richard S. Ascough "A Question of Death: Paul's Community-building Language in 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18" in *Journal of Biblical Literature* (Boston, Mass.: Society of Biblical Literature and Exegesis 2004), 518.

⁵⁴ Ralph F. Wilson, "The Command and Blessing of Holy Sex (1 Thessalonians 4:1-12), j 1& 2 *Thessalonians Discipleship Lessons* (Loumis, CA: JesusWalk

voices connected to the community were objecting to the prohibition against fornication and these voices were possibly coming from former friends or associates.⁵⁵ Paul's response to their objection was clear - "anyone who objects (to the prohibition against fornication) is not objecting to a human authority, but to God who gives you his Holy Spirit" (4:8).

In the Greek culture of the time (with its range of cults) it was not unusual for men to go outside a marriage for sexual experiences. In such a social context an interpretation of the Jewish commandment of "Thou shalt not commit adultery" could be understood as a prohibition against sexual intercourse with someone who was already married. Temple prostitutes did not appear to be married so it might be understood by some Thessalonians that these prostitutes were therefore available. Paul is "raising the bar" of observance of this commandment here, moving the bar of morality about (sex with married persons) to fornication (sex with unmarried people). .

In the first section of the letter 1:1-2:13 (as noted above) Paul has pointed out his own example in facing opposition, rough treatment and insults (2:2-3). He has avoided delusion, immorality or deception (2:3) and he has not sought flattery or money (2:5) . Thus as community leader he is not asking for standards of behaviour from the Thessalonians that he has not practiced himself. He has only sought their well-being (2:11-12).

The last Chapter of the letter, the passage of 4:18-18 begins with addressing a further concern which was apparently expressed by community members. What about their possible separation from loved ones who have already died? Such a separation undercut their sense of hope. In the Hellenistic background of Thessalonica there was respect shown to the

Publications) (http://www.jesuswalk.com/thessalonians/04_sex.htm [accessed 1 April 2014].

⁵⁵ Elliot *Documents and Images for the Study of Paul*, 73.

dead. The many social structures of a Hellenistic city included associations providing for the respectful burial of its members.⁵⁶ Paul had already taught the Thessalonians about the coming of Jesus Christ in the Parousia. But people wanted to know if their lost loved ones would also rise and be reunited with themselves at such a time (4:13).

It appears here that Paul needed to develop his own thinking about the Parousia event and the letter to the Thessalonians is a step towards this process.⁵⁷ How so? The later letter of Philippians refers to a change "in our lowly body" (Phil. 3:20). In the second letter to the Corinthians Paul gives further clarification about this when he talks of a "spiritual body" that is, the inner man that undergoes daily renewal (2 Cor. 4:16). In the letter to the Romans, possibly Paul's final letter, he talks of an inward participation in Christ's risen life as experienced in the here and now (Rom. 6:3.)⁵⁸

In the section of 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 (as mentioned) possibly written before these other letters, Paul puts forward an understanding of hope that reaches beyond death and makes the difficulties of leading a Christian lifestyle worthwhile. He bases this hope on the belief that "Jesus died and rose again" (4:14). He teaches the Thessalonians that all the community members, including those who have already died but who have based their lives on the moral teachings of Jesus, will also share in his resurrection. Such a "fact" puts the Christian community members at an advantage over "other people who have no hope" (4:13), presumably because others can only rely on the benefits of belonging to the Roman Empire.

⁵⁶ Ascough, "A Question of Death: Paul's Community-building Language in 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18," 510.

⁵⁷ Harrill, *Paul the Apostle: His Life and Legacy in their Roman Context*, 14.

⁵⁸ F.F. Bruce, "The Epistles of Paul" *Peake's Commentary on the Bible*, ed. Matthew Black (London: T. Nelson 1962), 929.

⁵⁸ Rosemary Canavan, *Clothing the Body of Christ at Colossae* (Tubingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2012), 82.

Paul tells the Thessalonians that "At the trumpet of God, the voice of the archangel will call out the command and the Lord himself will come down from heaven" (4:16). Actually, in terms of the social background of the city, such a statement compares this coming of Jesus with the coming of the Roman Emperor. Paul is playing on this sort of coming by the Emperor. People in a Greco-Roman city were given constant reminders of the might of the Roman Empire and Emperor.⁵⁹ But Paul reminds them that despite all the benefits that friendly links with Rome could confer on the Thessalonians, these benefits were far out weighed by the advantages of connection with Jesus Christ. A relationship with Jesus, developed through the observance of the commandments ensured well-being, not only in this world, but into the next life as well.

The verse of 4:18 develops the section of 4:13-18 into a climax of hope. People are assured "we (including loved ones who have died) shall stay with the Lord for ever."(v. 18).

The imagery of Paul's mention of being "taken up in the clouds" fits in with his own Jewish background.⁶⁰ Furthermore the use of this imagery helps him to incorporate into the text, the hope of the Jewish people as well. As the commentator Bonnie Thurston notes, "Paul had a genius for choosing language that had connotations in both the Jewish and Hellenistic ideational worlds."⁶¹ The mention of being "taken up in the clouds" also recalls Elijah, a prominent figure in Jewish tradition who was taken up to the heavens in a fiery chariot (2 Kings 2:11). Actually the gospel of Luke, written about thirty years later, continues on with such a reference to

⁵⁹ Candida R. Moss, Joel S. Baden, "1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 in Rabbinic Perspective' in *New Testament Studies*, 58 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012), 199.

⁶⁰ Bonnie B. Thurston and Judith M. Ryan, *Philippians and Philemon*, Vol 10, Sacra Pagina (Collegeville: Liturgical Press, 2005), 88.

Elijah (Luke 4:26). The inferred allusion to Elijah in 1 Thessalonians 4:18-18 is a reminder, that as far as equality is concerned, Gentile converts can enjoy the same sense of hope that Jews have enjoyed and more.

In the verse of 5:8 in the letter there is a further allusion to the Roman Empire and its benefits. Paul says "let us put on faith and love for a breastplate and the hope of salvation for a helmet" (5:8). Mention of such Roman army symbols was a further reminder to the Thessalonians that, rather than having to reject the positive aspects of Roman Empire membership, they could in fact endorse these aspects even while developing them further. (cf. "so that you are seen to be respectable by those outside the Church," 4:12).

The key point about hope in the passage of 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 is that participation in the resurrected life of Jesus Christ does not depend on whether or not one has died in a physical sense. Rather, it lies in the extent to which one has adhered to the moral lifestyle that was taught by Jesus Christ. Paul is urging people to act as Jesus acted and in this way they will share in his resurrected life beyond death.

This theme in 1 Thessalonians of needing to "work at" an identification with the morality of Christ was to be developed further in his letters to follow.

b. The Letter to the Philippians and the Theme of Generosity

According to Paul, a key element of the identity of the Philippians in Christ, relates to their understanding of the spirit of the Commandments, especially the need for material generosity. In his letter to the Philippians, instead of taking a legalistic approach, Paul puts a focus on the rationale

behind the commandments. He also warns against people who go against the commandments, saying “Their end is destruction, their god is the belly, and they glory in their shame.” (Phil 3:19)⁶² This echoes ‘Thou shalt not kill, steal or commit adultery’

In the letter to the Philippians Paul takes a thematic approach to the commandments. In the case of this letter there is an undergirding of the seventh commandment “Thou shalt not steal.” He expresses a special relationship of trust with these people (Phil 1:5-6). They had helped him financially at a time when other churches did not appear to recognize the need for this (Phil 4:15). He is grateful for their generosity. In contrast to this connection with the Philippians, when a church such as at Corinth was ready to help Paul financially, he would not accept their help (1 Cor. 10:14- 15). It appears his refusal in this case was not a matter of the money itself but the attitude with which the Corinthians were offering the money (1 Cor. 3:10). He saw an immaturity in them. Amongst this community as a group, and definitely amongst some of them as individuals, there was likely to be a misinterpretation that the money being given was on the basis of a client paying an employee. By contrast, the Philippians had shown Paul they supported him because they were concerned about his welfare. Thus he not only appreciated the money but the spirit in which it was given. In this sense their gift was a reversal of the law requirement of the commandments “Thou shalt not steal” (cf. Mark 10:19).

Paul not only expressed his gratitude to the Philippians for their financial contribution. He also he cited what could have been an already established “prose-hymn” used in Emperor worship. In such case he adapted this hymn to clarify the role of Christ cf.

⁶² *Ignatius Catholic Study Bible: New Testament*. Intro. Comm. Schott Hahn and Curtis Mitch, Catholic Edition (San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 2001).

"but emptying himself, taking the form of a servant,And being found in human form he humbled himself and became obedient unto death, even death on a cross."
(Phil 2:7-8).⁶³

The hymn about Christ in Philippians 2:6-11, is known as *kyrios*, which is a Hellenistic term.⁶⁴ The hymn in fact presents Christ in stark contrast to the Emperor.⁶⁵ Paul's use of the hymn in the letter shows he was making an effort to present his message in such a way that it would appeal to people and yet challenge them and their Hellenistic culture. In his use of the hymn he actually touches upon the whole framework of meaning that related to the Emperor. He transfers this framework of meaning about the Emperor, towards an understanding of Christ.

Throughout the letter to the Philippians Paul continues to elaborate on the meaning of this transferred meaning of the hymn. He emphasizes that the true gospel invites people to adopt the mind of Christ and thereby be prepared to sacrifice their own self interest for the benefit of others. He says "Let each of you look not only to his own interests but also to the interests of others." (Phil 2:4-5). It would be in such a way that the "body of Christ", that is, the community or *ekklesia*, would be strengthened.

These points made in the letter, relate to the social background of the times. In his book, *Paul: A Critical Life*, Jerome Murphy O'Connor explains how Paul had to face, in his travels, the dangers of being on the road. There was a constant fear of bandits, despite the *pax romana* imposed by

⁶³ Adela Yarbro Collins, "Psalms, Philippians 2:6-11, and the Origins of Christology," *Biblical Interpretation* 11, no ¾ (Worcester: Brill, 2003), 372.

⁶⁴ Bonnie and Ryan, *Philippians and Philemon*, 85.

⁶⁵ Fitzmyer *According to Paul: Studies in the Theology of the Apostle* (New York: Paulist Press, c. 1993), 104.

the Roman Empire. For instance Murphy O'Connor describes the difficulty of sleeping in taverns. Here there was apparently some protection. But there was also the fear that those people beside you would take what little money you may have. Murphy O'Connor says that Paul would have realized that such people would steal, not necessarily out of malevolence, but for their own survival. He knew that values in the wider society were such that it meant people had to inflict theft and even violence on others for their own welfare. He realized there was a need to build up communities where the self-giving of members was so embedded into the tenets of the membership that there was no longer a need to exercise this sort of violence in order to survive.⁶⁶ Paul's 'map of morality' was geared towards this. Thus giving towards the material security of others was being encouraged.

Paul's interpretation of the prose-hymn in Phil 2:6-11, as with all his teaching, was strongly influenced by the vision and voice of the risen Christ that he had seen and heard on the way to Damascus (Acts 9:3- 5). This incident occurred when Paul was going to Damascus to imprison Christians. Suddenly a light appeared and a voice said "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?" (Acts 9:4). After this vision he spent the rest of his life trying to understand and explain how it was that the Christians that he was pursuing were so intimately identified with Christ. The vision showed that Christ saw them as an extension of his own being. In the vision Christ was telling Saul that it was he Himself that⁶⁷ Saul (renamed Paul) was persecuting.

⁶⁶ Jerome Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1996), 101.

⁶⁷ Joseph Fitzmyer, *According to Paul: Studies in the Theology of the Apostle*, 8.

Paul's letters, as in the case of the letter to the Philippians, were addressed to a smaller group of people rather than to a large number. The letters themselves were a deliberate literary composition.⁶⁸ Basically Paul was trying to influence the behavior of the people that the letters addressed.⁶⁹ In the case of the letter to the Philippians, this could be viewed as a type of family letter with strong parallels to other family letters written in the Greco-Roman culture at the time.⁷⁰ Thus, as with his letter to the Thessalonians, there is the standard, Greek format which included a greeting, thanksgiving, the body of the letter and a greetings/farewell.⁷¹ On the one hand Paul had been raised as a Jew. But the very framework of the letters he wrote shows how he was trying to communicate with readers/auditors in the Greco-Roman culture and he was using ideas that were familiar to them.

Paul's letters, as described by Richard Earl in *The first and Second Thessalonians*, were written to influence and guide the behavior of members in a way similar to that of a Philosophical school.⁷² At the time, members of such a school, were not only expected to agree with the thinking of the letter but also to adapt their behavior to it. In this context behaviour distinguished the identity of people. A protreptic letter such as this would also be encouraging newer members to stand fast in the new lifestyle they were adopting. In the case of Philippians and the concern they had shown for Paul's material welfare, they were also being encouraged and shown

⁶⁸ J. Albert Harrill, *Paul the Apostle: His Life and Legacy in their Roman Context*, 13.

⁶⁹ Earl J. Richard, *The First and Second Thessalonians*, Vol 11, Sacra Pagina (Collegeville: The Liturgical Press, 1995), 68.

⁷⁰ Angela Standhartinger, "Join in Imitating me" (Philippians 3:17: Towards an Interpretation of Philippians 3" *New Testament Studies* 54 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008), 425.

⁷¹ Raymond Collins "The First Letter to the Thessalonians" *New Jerome Biblical Commentary* (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, c.1990), 772.

⁷² Richard, *The First and Second Thessalonians*, 69.

how this generosity would help them to imitate as he himself did, the self-giving of Christ.⁷³

The theme of a “reversal” of the commandment “Thou shalt not steal” is focused upon in this letter but is also dealt with in the context of other issues facing this community. Therefore the themes of “Thou shalt not kill and Thou shalt not commit adultery” are also raised. In the letter to the Philippians Paul and his co-workers including Timothy who is co-writing the letter, realize that in Philippi church members form only one group of people. There are also a number of other groups in the area and some of these have also been going around preaching the gospel and/or philosophy (cf. Gal 1:6-10).⁷⁴ Paul is conscious that their interpretations of the gospel differ from his own. For instance some “preachers” to which the church at Philippi would offer hospitality, would not necessarily be preaching the gospel of Christ crucified.⁷⁵ He therefore says, “Look out for the dogs, look out for the evil-workers, look out for those who mutilate the flesh” (Phil 3:2) One wonders if he was referring to anyone in particular here. At the time, in Corinth for example, there were itinerant Hellenistic Cynics who travelled around in a way that had similarities with what Paul was doing.⁷⁶ But some of these people were over-permissive, and even decadent in their behavior. They could have been included in this warning of Paul. A warning against people who practiced witch craft could also have been included here. There were others again who wanted to impose circumcision on Gentile believers so that the external

⁷³ Margaret M. Mitchell, “1 and 2 Thessalonians,” *The Cambridge Companion to Paul*, ed. James D. G. Dunn (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003), 52.

⁷⁴ Gordon D. Fee, *Paul's Letter to the Philippians* (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1995), 366.

⁷⁵ Fee, *Paul's Letter to the Philippians*, 370.

⁷⁶ F. Gerald Downing, *Cynics, Paul and the Pauline Churches* (London and New York: Routledge, 1998), 90.

law, rather than the mind of Christ, would determine their behavior (cf. Gal 6:12-13). Thus there is the reference to those who want to “mutilate the flesh”. Warnings against such a range of people and the ‘gospels’ they preached was a theme that not only occurs in the letter to the Philippians. It also occurs in Corinthians, Galatians, Romans and other letters of Paul as well.

In his letters Paul is trying to nurture church members into the "mind of Christ" that is, the attitude of Christ towards the commandments. In this sense he “side steps” talking about the commandments directly. Rather he wants to emphasize it is in the “mind of Christ” attitude and behavior as expressed in the hymn to the Philippians (1 Phil 2:6-11) that the identity of the Christian is to be found.⁷⁷ This hymn links in a Christ-like identity with creation itself. “every knee should bend in heaven and on earth and under the earth” (Phil 2:10).⁷⁸ Christians also need to believe that by the adoption of such a "mind of Christ" they will be able to "break through" into a new life as a "body of Christ", and into a new type of society. As Murphy O'Connor outlines “What Paul wanted to get across was that the society of the time was oppressive in its most basic elements, and in its very structure.”⁷⁹ Paul wanted his readers/auditors to form a new type of society.

The letter to the Philippians appears to deal in particular with a reversal of the commandment “Thou shalt not steal.” What about Paul’s particular focus on a “reversal” of the commandments of “Thou shalt not kill” and “Thou shalt not commit adultery” ?

⁷⁷ Fitzmyer, *According to Paul: Studies in the Theology of the Apostle*, 105.

⁷⁸ Fitzmyer, *According to Paul: Studies in the Theology of the Apostle*, 13.

⁷⁹ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 208.

**c. Galatians and Paul's insistence on
Self-determination**

Paul's letter to the people of Galatia, differs markedly from his letter to the Philippians. On the one hand, he is elaborating further on his initial presentation of Christ in the *Kyrios* hymn of Philippians (Phil. 2:6-11). Also, he is addressing an explicit group of people. But in the case of the letter to the Galatians he is confronting them. There are people there who not only have views different from his own. They have also been involved in "back-biting." Paul. In Galatia, people were slipping back into the Judaic practice of circumcision and they were also trying to practice the complexities of the Judaic law. Paul confronted these people and stressed the need for self-determination. His challenge to the Galatians relates to a reversal of "Thou shalt not kill."

When this letter was written, Paul's opponents had taken explicit action to undercut not only his good standing in the community but also his leadership influence there. The church at Antioch, which was in Galatia, was included in this shift of loyalty.⁸⁰

According to Acts 15, Paul and Barnabas had been sent as delegates from Antioch to a Jerusalem Council. This Council was largely about the need or not, for Gentile converts to be circumcised. After the Council the two were sent back to Antioch. to give a report to the Church there about the decisions taken. According to Acts 15:31 the Antiochene church welcomed both Paul and Barnabas and the outcome of the Council. But the letter to Galatians, shows that Paul's relationship with the church was quite

⁸⁰ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 158.

different from the description given in Acts.

A historical question is raised by scholars trying to work out the time the Jerusalem Council was held and the time the Galatian letter was written. Did this come before or after the Jerusalem Council? On the one hand it shows Paul's attack on people from Jerusalem including Peter the Apostle, who like others, was no longer eating with the Gentile converts (Gal. 2:11-13). This may suggest the Jerusalem Council came after the public confrontation with Peter rather than before it. If the Council did come after the confrontation and it did succeed in resolving the issue of a separation between Jewish and Gentile converts, then the letter could fit in with Luke's positive description of the Council's outcome (Acts 15:32). For instance if the Greek word *de* in Gal 2:11 were translated as "on the other hand" rather than with the word "but," this could suggest that the confrontation with Peter was before the Council took place.

However, the letter appears to actually mention the Council in Galatians 2:2 (cf. "I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas"). This verse suggests that the Council was before the confrontation with Peter and others rather than after it. Also, the abrupt statement of Paul "Oh foolish Galatians! Who has bewitched you" (Gal. 3:1) also suggests the confrontation with Peter (Gal 2:11) came after the Council because they had reversed their previous behavior.

If such is the case further questions arise. For example how long after the Council did the confrontation take place and what led to the change in approach on the part of those in Galatia. Murphy O'Connor says that the Jerusalem Council was in 51CE.⁸¹ Carl Holladay says the letters of Philippians, 1 Corinthians and Galatians were written around 54-55 and from

⁸¹ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 349.

an Ephesian prison.⁸² Fitzmyer agrees with this date.⁸³ But Ellis says Galatians was written late in Paul's life.⁸⁴ A discussion about the time of writing has relevance to the key point Paul was trying to make in the letter because it puts this into its historical context.

The historical context raises the question as to why were people wanting Jewish converts to eat apart from Gentile converts and why did either they, or others, want Gentile converts to be circumcised? There is mention of "certain men came from James" (Gal.2:12). These influenced Peter and even Barnabas against eating with Gentiles (Gal. 2:11-13). Joseph Fitzmyer points out that it was not necessarily the same group of people who were agitating about eating with Gentile converts who were also insisting on the circumcision of Gentile converts. Fitzmyer also notes that Lightfoot had suggested people insisting on circumcision may have been connected to the Essenes. He notes that Lightfoot's suggestion about this group of people was made before the discovery of the Qumran manuscripts in the 1940's. These manuscripts are associated with Essenes.⁸⁵ The manuscripts (found after Lightfoot's suggestion) endorse the possibility of an Essene influence in Galatia.⁸⁶

Murphy O'Connor provides a reason why James and his friends thought that Jewish converts eating apart from Gentile converts was not as important as obviously Paul

⁸² Carl R. Holladay, *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament: Interpreting the Message and Meaning of Jesus Christ*, 382-3.

⁸³ Joseph A. Fitzmyer, "The Letter to the Galatians," *New Jerome Biblical Commentary* (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice Hall, 1990), 237.

⁸⁴ Peter Ellis, *Seven Pauline Letters*, (Collegeville, Minn.: The Liturgical Press, 1982), 174.

⁸⁵ Broderick, *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, 194-5.

⁸⁶ Fitzmyer, "The Letter to the Galatians," 237.

thought it was. This was because of the political background of the time. On the one hand the Temple at Jerusalem in the 50's CE may have appeared very established and busy. It was the centre of the significantly large Jewish diaspora⁸⁷ from four to eight million people. This was arguably about 10% of the Roman Empire's population.⁸⁸ But in reality there were real insecurities for Jewish people at that time in Jerusalem in the 50's CE. For instance in 39-41 CE the Emperor Gaius ordered the legate of Syria to erect a giant statue of the Emperor as Jupiter in the Holy of Holies in the Temple. As it turned out, the Jewish King Agrippa persuaded Gaius to change his mind.⁸⁹ But there was a realization amongst Jews in general that their political position could be precarious. There could also have been a general consensus amongst Jews that a protection against such vulnerability would have been for them to "stick together." James therefore could have wanted to strengthen the identity of Christians of Jewish origin by insisting on a more exacting observance of Jewish practices and fellowship identity amongst them.⁹⁰ In any case, in the churches of Galatia and elsewhere, people would have been attending house-churches. They would have naturally gravitated towards those places where there were people with a similar background.

But Paul thought differently about this.

At the end of the letter to the Galatians he dwells on reasons why some people had been trying to impose circumcision on Gentile converts. He says it was "that they may not be

⁸⁷ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 142.

⁸⁸ Cf. Arguably West Hunter "Jews in the Roman Empire"

<https://westhunt.wordpress.com/2013/06/14/jews-in-the-roman-empire/>
[accessed 12 Dec 2018]

⁸⁹ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 139.

⁹⁰ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 141.

persecuted for the cross of Christ” (Gal 6:12). This implies that such people thought it was “safer” to have a Jewish identity rather than a Christian one. Why so? A threat of persecution by the Emperor Gaius was not the only political issue that could have been behind the Galatian confrontation. When Rome burned at the time of Emperor Nero in 64 CE., the blame was put on Christians. This resultant savage persecution of Christians was not to take place until 64 CE. But by 54-55 CE Nero was already in power. People were aware of his increasing savagery. Christians were becoming more aware themselves that they were only a tiny and therefore vulnerable minority. Even Gentile converts, including those in Galatia, may have thought it was safer to identify themselves as circumcised Jews. Thus they readily accepted the influence of the “Judaizers.” In his own life Paul had personal experience of their fear of persecution. He had been imprisoned himself and would have been keenly aware of the possibility of having to face "the wild animals at Ephesus" as he put it to the Corinthians (1 Cor. 14:33).

Despite possible arguments in favour of Gentile converts being circumcised, Paul insists that by undertaking circumcision Gentile converts were side-stepping the challenge of "living in Christ." They were allowing themselves to be manipulated. In the letter he talks of his own past experience in saying “to them we did not yield submission even for a moment, that the truth of the gospel might be preserved for you.” (Gal 2:5). This same truth of the gospel meant that Galatians would need to be prepared to face death for the gospel. As set out in the hymn to the Philippians, just as Christ was ready to accept death, so these people were challenged to die if necessary, in imitation of Christ. Such a challenge would apply to all converts within the Galatian church,, whether they be of Jewish background eating apart from Gentiles or Gentiles who were preparing for circumcision..

In both cases, Paul was opposed to what was happening in Galatia. He viewed the Eucharistic unity of eating together as being essential to the on-going self-giving that is integral to community membership in Christ. This sort of stress on the importance of self-giving within a freedom framework showed he wanted a covenant based on that of Abraham rather than the regulations of Moses.⁹¹

Paul challenges Gentile converts for failing to realize that if they think of themselves as being justified through circumcision and their adherence to the Jewish law, then the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ has been in vain (Gal 2:21). The very act of undergoing circumcision would mean they were making a statement that it is the external Jewish law that justifies them rather than their own living in the self-giving spirit of Christ (Gal 2:16). Paul recalls the faith of Abraham who was justified because of his faith in the promises of God rather than because of adherence to the law. As it was, the Mosaic "law" as Jews knew it, came about four hundred and thirty years after Abraham (Gal 3:17)..⁹² Paul says this law was introduced so people would know what was wrong (cf. in particular 'thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal') But now that Christ had come, they no longer needed the detailed stipulations that had been added to the commandments over the years. In fact by the time of Paul, these stipulations had developed into a whole network of laws that Peter himself had said he could not observe (Acts 15:10).

Paul also observes that if Gentile converts adopt circumcision and what this implies, then they would also need to adopt the Jewish law in all the complexity. Paul reminds them that the

⁹¹ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 209.

⁹² Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 209.

law itself, according to Scripture, is under a curse when people fail to keep the whole it (Gal 3:10).

In this situation what annoys Paul most of all is the interference and manipulation by “Judaizers” of the self-determination of the Gentile converts. The coming of Christ had given his followers a freedom and self-determination that some people were now trying to take away from them. We are reminded here of one of the three key social commandments, that is, “Thou shalt not kill.” “Killing” in the wider, metaphorical sense, includes the manipulation of people to the extent that their self-determination and their “freedom” is denied to them. In the letter Paul writes of “false brethren secretly brought in, who slipped in to spy out our freedom which we have in Christ Jesus that they might bring us into bondage.” (Gal 2:4). He claims that such people were trying to take away the freedom and self-determination in Christ that community members in Galatia had enjoyed.

The communal context of what was going on here was important. As Murphy O’Connor says, “freedom is a property of the community, not a possession of the individual.”⁹³ Thus, taking away such a freedom would destroy the authenticity and identity of the community as a whole. In his criticisms about such a denial of freedom Paul avoids explicit mention of the commandment which was at issue here, that is, “Thou shalt not kill.” But again, as in the letters to the Philippians, the theme of such a commandment undergirds the content and tone of the letter.

⁹³ Murphy O’Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 209.

d. 1 Corinthians and Respect for the Body

If one could argue that Paul was dealing with a theme about poverty and a reversal of “Thou shalt not steal” in his letter to the Philippians, and a reversal of “Thou shalt not kill” in his letter to the Galatians, then one can pick up similarities along the same lines in his first letter to the Corinthians. Here, he deals with a theme of “Thou shalt not commit adultery.”

On the other hand Paul’s “family” letter-style in his letter to the Philippians” stands in contrast to the writing style he uses in the first letter to the Corinthians. He chastises the Corinthians cf. “And you are arrogant. Ought you not rather to mourn?” (1 Cor.: 5:2). But at the same time, he continues in his efforts to train people into keeping the spirit of the commandments and the mindset of Christ..

In the case of the Corinthians, Paul develops a theology about the body and the implications of this for the community as a whole. He shows that respect for one’s body exists behind the commandment of “Thou shalt not commit adultery”. This commandment is dealing with relationship as such.

Paul had warned the Philippians against visiting preachers, and it is soon apparent in the letter to the Corinthians that some of these preachers, especially Cynics with their Greek Stoic background, had already been influencing the community in Corinth.⁹⁴ In Paul’s reprimand about a man living with his father’s wife he points out that even by pagan standards this behavior was unacceptable (1 Cor. 5:1). He says such a man should be expelled from the community (1 Cor. 5:13). Given that Cynics were prepared to “chuck out” social conventions and one wonders about their influence in

⁹⁴ Murphy O’Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 303.

this matter.⁹⁵

Paul's emphasis in 1 Corinthians, as in his other letters, is primarily related to the behavior of a group of people. In the case mentioned above misbehavior had been reported back to him by others. Paul used this system of "reporting back" in order to keep in touch with the communities he founded. Timothy for instance had given a more favourable report about what was going on with the Thessalonians (1 Thess. 3:6). But with regard to the Corinthians situation reports had not been good. In the wider context and as Ronald Fung points out, the sexual morality of the society of the time was "sheer chaos." This was not only noted by Christians but⁹⁶ even by the pagans themselves. To Paul it appeared that the community in Corinth was slipping into the behavior of those who lived around them. It was therefore not surprising that sexual misconduct was being reported.

As noted above, Paul's letters as a whole are mainly about behavior rather than preaching. However in 1 Corinthians he not only deals with individual behavioral issues relating to "Thou shalt not commit adultery". He also puts this in the wider context of his own theological understanding of the "body of Christ". Two understandings of both the body of the individual and the corporate body of the group are being linked together. Again this theology about the body is ultimately based on Paul's experience of Christ's revelation to himself when he was on his way to arrest Christians at Damascus. In this experience a voice called out

Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? And he

⁹⁵Cf. David Padfield, "Corinth, Greece in the New Testament," (Zion, Illinois: Church of Christ) <http://www.padfield.com/2005/corinth.html> [accessed 29th May 2016].

⁹⁶ Ronald Y. K. Fung, *The Epistle to the Galatians* (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1988), 253.

said, "Who are you, Lord? And he said, "I am Jesus whom you are persecuting. (Acts 9:4)

Both the individual follower of Christ and the corporate body of his followers were identified with the person of Jesus himself.

In the outlining of his ideas about "the body of Christ" in 1 Corinthians Paul especially warns against the use of prostitutes. He points out that the Christian is part of the body of Christ, "Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ?" (1 Cor. 6:15). Then he uses the image of the sacred Temple to describe the body of a Christian as a temple of the Holy Spirit. He points out that by being joined to a prostitute this sacred Temple of the body is being defiled "For God's temple is holy, and that temple you are." (1 Cor. 3:17).

He also reprimands the community because of their behavior at the community meal of the Eucharist. He says "It is not the Lord's supper that you eat." (1 Cor. 11:20). For him, this community meal should be a time when the corporate body of Christ finds expression and it is strengthened by the "self-giving" of its members. But in Corinth there was not a genuine sharing of love here.⁹⁷ The Eucharist, as Paul recalls, is the re-enactment of the crucifixion of Christ (1 Cor. 11:26). It is therefore a time when members of the body of Christ should express and re-affirm their readiness to give of themselves for the benefit of others - even to death on a cross, cf. "you proclaim the Lord's death." (1 Cor. 11:26). Paul notes that in Corinth that there are some people who are bringing food to the Eucharistic service and then eating it amongst themselves rather than sharing this with all of those present. In a practical way he accosts them "What!

⁹⁷ Jerome Murphy O'Connor *Keys to First Corinthians* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009), 226.

Do you not have houses to eat and drink in?" (1 Cor. 11:22).

Elsewhere in the letter he again chides the wealthier members of the Corinthian community who apparently consider themselves to be superior to others, including himself, "You are held in honor but we in disrepute." (1 Cor. 4:10). . Apparently, their attitude towards himself was related to the fact that Paul had been earning a living as an artisan rather than relying on payments from the Community. Thus some of the wealthier members of the community, who were more likely to have been educated, were looking down on him (1 Cor. 4:10). Their attitude fitted in with the ideas of some philosophers of the time who despised manual labor.⁹⁸ Thus some such people were wanting to leave Christianity and its teaching in the realm of ideas only.⁹⁹ However, Paul insists that they should apply themselves to developing a mindset and a lifestyle that is based upon the giving of oneself to others. He puts himself forward as an example to imitate here (1 Cor. 4:17) – even if he is viewed by these people as a lowly artisan.¹⁰⁰

Paul insists that unity in a community of Christ needs to be based on mutual respect, regardless of one's background. It appears some people would have preferred to align their thinking with that of the preacher Apollo (1Cor. 1:12) rather than Paul. Apollo in turn was strongly influenced by the Jewish philosopher Philo.¹⁰¹ On the other hand, as regards Apollo, it appears that with all his brilliance as an orator, he himself supported Paul's mission. His position on this appears to be reflected later in the letter to the Corinthians

⁹⁸ Murphy O'Connor *Keys to First Corinthians*, 227.

⁹⁹ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 303.

¹⁰⁰ Richard S. Ascough, "A Question of Death: Paul's Community – Building Language in 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18," *Journal of Biblical Literature* no 3 (Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature, 2004), 517.

¹⁰¹ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 173.

when Paul says that Apollo was not prepared at that stage to return to Corinth (1 Cor. 16:12). Perhaps, one could speculate, Apollo knew of the divisions within the community and he did not want people 'lining up' behind him in opposition to Paul.

In any case, in the letter of 1 Corinthians, Paul insists that he has taken on the position of being poor and vulnerable deliberately because he knows that being poor and vulnerable is what is required of him. He is not asking the Corinthians to readily go without food and drink and clothes, or be beaten and not have a home. But he asks them to have the same mindset as himself. Murphy O'Connor describes this mindset as follows: "It was up to each believer to discern how in any given set of circumstances the creative, self-sacrificing love (that had been demonstrated by) Christ should be given reality."¹⁰² In his teaching about the corporate body of Christ or *ecclesia*, Paul points out that some people have one gift and other people may have the opposite gift (1 Cor. 7:7). He reminds the Corinthians that it is all these varied gifts that are needed by the one body or community. Gifts should be directed to the benefit of all. For instance it may be one thing to have the gift of tongues. But if such a gift cannot be interpreted for the benefit of all there is little point in displaying it (1 Cor. 14:26).

Towards the end of 1 Corinthians Paul talks about the "spiritual body" Again he reiterates the need for faith in Christ, that is, the belief that by adopting a Christ-like lifestyle and mindset, one will win out in the end and share in the resurrected life of Christ "but we shall all be changed" (1 Cor. 15:51. Such a resurrected life in Christ will continue on, even beyond death.

¹⁰² Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 205.

In conclusion, as regards a commandment theme undergirding the letters to the Philippians, Galatians and Corinthians and at a general level, Paul was dealing with critics who were saying that his preaching was an invitation to licence.¹⁰³ But in fact, because of his Jewish background his approach indeed focused upon the commandments. These were his ‘starting point’.¹⁰⁴ At the same time he was involved with a re-interpretation of these. And, he was also trying to present his focus in such a way that the Gentiles with a Greek philosophic background would understand.

Paul’s “re-interpretation” of the commandments relates to a comment made by the scholar Brendan Byrne. Byrne has said “Paul’s problem with the law lies in its incapacity to address¹⁰⁵ human sinfulness at sufficiently radical depth.” Thus his treatment of the law, whether it be in earlier letters or finally in Romans was an attempt to overcome this. His teaching develops and stresses a mindset of self-giving to others in order to build up a society in which people can be secure without having to steal, commit violence or betray relationships.



¹⁰³ Ellis, *Seven Pauline Letters*, 201.

¹⁰⁴ Ellis, *Seven Pauline Letters*, 4.

¹⁰⁵ Brendan Byrne, *Galatians and Romans* (Collegeville: The Liturgical Press, 2012), 181.

Chapter Five

Paul's Challenge to the "Spirit People" of Corinth

Paul's reinterpretation of key social commandments of 'Thou shalt not steal, kill or commit adultery' are threaded through his letters, for instance, as discussed above, in the letters of Philippians, Galatians and 1 Corinthians. But in the case of 1 Corinthians Paul goes further. He attempts to deal with a basic position of Greek Philosophy as expressed in the Greek Stoic idea that people are born with a "divine spark" which is identified with them. Such an idea was affecting the attitude of Corinthians towards their own body. As it was, Stoic belief in a "divine spark" was identified with the human mind. It would have been considered by a Jew to be a form a self-worship. It would conflict with the first of the Ten Commandments "Thou shalt not have strange gods before me."¹⁰⁶

Given the influence of Greek Stoics amongst the community at Corinth which Paul had founded, he uses the letter of 1 Corinthians to come to grips with the difference between the Christian and Stoic approaches. The "Spirit People" of Corinth had been influenced by the Stoics. Paul was attempting to educate them into the mindset of the Christian.

¹⁰⁶ Plenary Council, *Catechism: Issued with Episcopal Authority for General Use in Australia*, 28.

a. Paul's Eschatological Approach to Marriage and Celibacy

For the *pneumatikoi* or 'spirit people' in the Corinthian community it was the 'divine spark' as they saw it, that really counted in a meaningful life. They considered the body to be of lesser importance. This idea tipped some of them into an attitude of despising the body and with it the institution of marriage. And/or they considered that the use of one's body with prostitutes (1 Cor. 6:16) or the practice of someone living with their father's wife (1 Cor. 5:1-2) was of little importance.

The reflections to follow are an exegesis of 1 Corinthians Chapter Seven, especially 1 Cor. 7:2 and 1 Cor. 7:33-34. These verses show how Paul was developing a "set" of key values for the Corinthian church in relation to marriage cf. "Thou shalt not commit adultery". He was not only selecting out a key value for this commandment. He was also developing a particular type of approach to this and other commandments.

In the case of 1 Corinthians Chapter Seven he was dealing with a community that divided on the issue of marriage and celibacy.

The verses of 1 Corinthians 7:29 and 7:33-34 show that Paul was answering a question that had been included in a lost letter from the Corinthians to himself (cf. 1 Cor. 7:1).¹⁰⁷ He begins his answer in Chapter Seven with the statement "it is better for a man not to touch a woman" (1 Cor. 7:1). In this way he seems to agree with a proposal, apparently put by some of the Corinthians, that suggests it would be better for

¹⁰⁷ A. A. Ruprecht, "Marriage and Divorce, Adultery and Incest," *Dictionary of Paul and his letters: a Compendium of Contemporary Biblical Scholarship*, ed. Gerald F. Hawthorne and Ralph P. Martin (Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press).

the members of the Corinthian community that is, the *ekklesia*, to remain celibate (7:1b).¹⁰⁸ The verses of 7:29 and 7:33-34 appear to continue on with this agreement.

However, on the other hand, much of Chapter Seven deals with modifications to his opening statements on the subject (cf. 1 Cor. 7:2).¹⁰⁹ Paul talks about the rights of the husband and the rights of the wife (7:4). He says and implies several times, that married people should remain as they are (7:10).¹¹⁰ Then even if, by agreement, they have times of celibacy, he puts limitations upon this (7:5). Overall, the general consensus amongst his conflicting statements appears to be that people should remain as they are. In terms of community-building, staying as they are would actually make for more stability.¹¹¹ And, in fact for Paul, a major focus of the letter and the discussion about celibacy is about unity and stability. It is on this same subject of unity that he begins the main part of the letter (1 Cor. 1:10).

Paul's modifications about celibacy show that he is aware of a likely intent on the part of some Corinthians (e.g. spirit people') to not only recommend celibacy for others but also try to impose this on the whole community. This sort of pressure would make the Corinthians church even more divided.¹¹²

It could be pointed out that this apparent 'plan' on the part of some such Corinthians to make such an imposition on others would not necessarily be the outcome of a Gnostic influence (a later, major problem in the church). Rather, it could have

¹⁰⁸ Meeks, *The First Urban Christians*, 102.

¹⁰⁹ Ruprecht, "Marriage and Divorce, Adultery and Incest,"

¹¹⁰ Meeks, *The First Urban Christians*, 179.

¹¹¹ Meeks, *The First Urban Christians*, 179.

¹¹² Meeks, *The First Urban Christians*, 179.

stemmed from an eschatological error.¹¹³ Paul had already taught the Corinthians about an eschatological future. (cf. 1 Cor. 1:7- 8). Such an approach in Paul's teaching fitted in with his whole life and preaching. From the time of the appearance of the resurrected Christ to himself on the way to Damascus he had focused and continued to focus upon Christ crucified and resurrected (cf. 1 Cor. 1:18).¹¹⁴ For Paul, the fact that Christ had risen from the dead meant that all those people who believe in the resurrected Christ could and eventually would, share in the same sort of existence that Christ has (1 Thess. 5:10, 1 Cor. 1:14)).¹¹⁵ But he was also acutely aware that bodily existence and present awareness of one's body in the here and now would be key to such a resurrected future (1 Cor. 6:15).¹¹⁶ In the wider context of his teaching and therefore in this letter in particular, he was putting a stress on the body and the need for its ordered treatment (cf. 1 Cor. 1:15-16). His discussion about celibacy was therefore in the context of restraining those people who thought they were free from concern about it (1 Cor. 6:13).

On the one hand Paul wanted the Corinthians to be oriented towards the coming of the resurrected Christ. But he also wanted them to be aware of the bodily necessities of the present. In this sense therefore 1 Cor. 7:29 and 7:33-34 could be interpreted as emphasizing a spiritual attitude towards marriage rather than the imposition of a universal celibacy.

¹¹³ Talbert, *Reading Corinthians. A Literary and Theological Commentary on 1 and 2 Corinthians*, 30.

¹¹⁴ Paula Gooder, "Reading Paul for the First Time with Paul Gooder. Mpg (Nottingham, England: St Johns),

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SBm-92NNKuga&feature=youtu.be> (accessed March 2016).

¹¹⁵ Ehrman "Paul as pastor"

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pMVatCd_1xM.

¹¹⁶ Jerome Neyrey, "Order and Purity in Paul's Symbolic Universe," *Paul in Other Words: A Cultural Reading of his Letters* (Louisville, KY: Westminster/John Knox 1990), 35.

The ambiguity of Paul's attitude towards marriage and celibacy as reflected in 1 Corinthians Chapter 7 is better understood not only in the context of his teaching as a whole but also against the background of Corinth's history and geographical situation. Such a look at background also provides the context in which he grappled with the basic position of the "spirit people". As mentioned in the previous chapter, the Corinth of Paul's time was a relatively new city which had been rebuilt by the Julius Caesar in 44 CE¹¹⁷ Because of its position situated on an isthmus in Achaia in Greece it enjoyed the benefits of trade between two ports and its people- largely consisted of "freed men". These "freed men" were affluent and upwardly mobile. As a city, Corinth had a Greek cultural background but it was also multicultural with many many deities worshipped there. Amongst the general population the Christian Community would have appeared relatively insignificant. The scholar Murphy O'Connor has suggested a figure of about fifty persons in the community.¹¹⁸ This "church" existed as one of a number Paul had established in key urban centres around the Roman Empire.¹¹⁹ But it appears Corinth had more problems than some of these other communities (e.g. at Philippi). Moreover church members were probably meeting in a number of house churches and the plurality of meeting places would have added to the likelihood of divisions amongst them. Moreover the arrival of foreign preachers going around such places would in itself have added to problems in Corinth and resulted in an undercutting of Paul's authority. Paul, with his Pharisaic background had focus upon an ordered "map" of morality. He would have seen this as an intrusion as a form of "pollution" in the community.¹²⁰ It seems he was particularly aware and sensitive to the

¹¹⁷ Talbert, *Reading Corinthians*, xvi.

¹¹⁸ J. Murphy O'Connor, *St Paul's Corinth* (Collegeville, Minn: Liturgical Press, c.2002) 156-7.

¹¹⁹ Meeks, *The First Urban Christians*, 10.

¹²⁰ Neyrey, *Paul, in Other Words*: 52.

popularity of Apollo who was apparently a more eloquent preacher than himself (1 Cor. 2:1). The Corinthians were largely Greek, and they were particularly impressed with the eloquence and “wisdom” displayed by Apollo. But we find that Paul has a satirical “dig” about their esteem for wisdom. He notes their inability to find someone amongst themselves who was “wise” enough to sort out their disputes (1 Cor. 6:5).¹²¹

The letter to the Corinthians is a rhetorical document with parallels to the many schools of rhetoric that existed at the time around the Empire.¹²² But something distinctive about Paul’s letters was that they were much longer than other letters of the time.¹²³ A reason for this and in the case of 1 Corinthians he was trying to move the the community towards unity and towards his own understanding of an eschatological future. At a cursory reading, of 1 Corinthians for instance, one could wonder why it took him so long (six chapters) to reach his answer to the question that the Corinthians had sent him about celibacy. Also in the lead up to Chapter 7 it may appear that he jumps from one subject to another.

But in fact the text of 1 Corinthians. is tightly argued both towards his response to the question of celibacy and to his overall response to Greek Stoicism. One of the distractions for a reader here with regard to tightness of the text could be

¹²¹ H. W. Attridge “The First Letter of Paul to the Corinthians: Chapters 3-4,” “Sex and Courts,” *Yale Bible Studies Series* (USA, New Haven: Yale University, c. 2016).<http://ark.divinity.edu.au/mod/url/view.php?id=3973/> [accessed March 2016].

¹²² Ben Witherington, “Paul the Letter Writer,” *New Testament Rhetoric: An Introductory Guide to the art and persuasion in and of the New Testament* (Eugene, Oregon: Cascade Books, c. 2009), 118.

¹²³ Witherington, “Paul the Letter Writer,” 115.

Paul's chiasmic argumentation that consists of statements set out in a circular structure, that is, ABCDCBA¹²⁴ Also, at times, the one chiasm can lead into another chiasmic statement and there are instances of this at the start of 1 Cor. 7:2-5 as Talbert points out.¹²⁵ But this sort of circuitous approach to the question at hand could also reflect one of Paul's attempts to avoid further alienation from these people.

In the closely structured text leading into 1 Cor. 7:27, and 1 Cor. 7:33-34 Paul, with his Pharisaic background, was setting out a cosmological "map." (as well as a moral one) which he hoped would replace that of Judaism and rather centre around the crucified and resurrected Christ.¹²⁶ This has already been discussed. In terms of morality he needed to tread a fine line between either over emphasizing idealism (such as amongst the *pneumatikoi* or "spirit people") or, on the other hand, ignoring it.

In setting out his material to "move" the Corinthians towards the acceptance of his own belief system and moral "map" Paul was aware of the spiritual immaturity of these people to whom he was writing (3:1-2). He realized the structure of his letter had to go through a step by step process before reaching a discussion of eschatological celibacy. Thus the letter began in a standard way.¹²⁷ But then focus is soon put on deficiencies in the community that showed up in their divisions (1:10)

In steps towards the delicate subject of celibacy, as raised in Chapter 7, Paul reminded the Corinthians it was the crucified and resurrected Christ that united them (1:17)

¹²⁴ Neyrey, *Paul in Other Words*, 27.

¹²⁵ Talbert,, *Reading Corinthians*: xv.

¹²⁶ Neyrey, *Paul, in Other Words*., 16

¹²⁷ Witherington, "Paul the Letter Writer," 113

Then as well as pointing to their immaturity (3:2) he addressed their lack of recognition of his own authority (1:1, 4:8-13). He reminded them that it was he himself who had begun the community and in this sense he was its “father” (4:15). In fact Chapter 7 as a whole, shows a fatherly concern for the Corinthians. This can be seen in the detail with which Paul considers the range of marriage situations and he shows an individualized approach towards the subject.

The tone of the letter in relation to the subject of celibacy was important as well. People were being invited in Ch 7 towards sharing in an eschatological attitude towards marriage. Thus in a sense on the one hand, this consisted of a hierarchical approach to marriage. But Paul said such a ‘hierarchy’ could be expressed in a range of ways. He proposed that not getting married at all would be better (1 Cor.7:1). But he also said this lifestyle was not meant for all (1 Cor. 7:7). He also insisted that if a person did undertake a celibate life in preference to marriage there should be a free choice on behalf of such a person (1 Cor. 7:17). It would be only through the action of God (rather than “a divine spark”) that such a choice would be possible (1 Cor.7:25). Chapter 7 in 1 Corinthians is not only about the observance of commandments as such. It also explores how “the bar” of the commandments can be raised

It is in Chapter 15 that Paul goes on to deal with the priority of the First of the Ten Commandments. This is “Thou shalt not have strange gods before me.”¹²⁸ The reliance of the *pneumatakoï* on their Stoic belief in a “divine spark” as being part of their own being, tipped them into an infringement of this commandment. Paul needed to

¹²⁸ Plenary Council, *Catechism: Issued with Episcopal Authority for General Use in Australia*, 28.

confront this head on.

b. 1 Corinthians 15 and the Need to Rely on the Action of God - the difference between Paul and the Greek Stoics

Paul the “first” Christian theologian, had been a Pharisee and he was imbued with the mindset and learning of a Pharisaic Jew. He realised that the book of Genesis, particularly its first chapters, had set out “a map” of belief for the Jews. Genesis, as with all Jewish teaching, underlined the “Otherness” of God and it stressed monotheism. Paul saw his own role as basing his prime position on Genesis yet at the same time outlining a “Christian” map of morality.¹²⁹ This included paramount respect for the opening Commandment “Thou shalt not have strange gods before me.” (Exodus 20:3).

In his attempts to re-set a “map” of morality for the emerging Christian communities, he needed to clarify the differences between a “Christian” understanding of one’s relationship with the divinity and the understanding that was accepted by the Greeks and in particular the Greek Stoics.¹³⁰ When he was writing his two letters to the church in Corinth therefore he would have realised this was an opportunity to clarify these differences.

We recall that at the time the letters were written church members in Corinth were being influenced by Cynics who were itinerant preachers. In some ways these itinerant preachers were like Paul but they were also Stoics.¹³¹ This parallel has been referred to above. Some in the Corinthian church were adopting the same mindset of the Cynic (rather

¹²⁹ Neyrey, *Paul in Other Words*, 53.

¹³⁰ Neyrey, *Paul, in Other Words*., 50.

¹³¹ Downing, *Cynics, Paul and the Pauline Churches*, 85-6.

than that of Christ). In particular some of them thought baptism that had imbued them with something similar to the “divine spark” that the Stoics were preaching about. Thus they were overemphasising their “spirit” at the expense of respect for their body.(1 Cor. 3:16). Such people were called *pneumatikoi* or “spirit people”

In many ways the topics in the first Corinthian letter lead into its Chapter 15 which is the second last chapter. In this sense Chapter 15 is a culmination of the whole letter. And, it acts as a summing up of Paul’s dispute with the “spirit people”.

In the chapter Paul points out that God, as Creator, has the freedom to change people’s bodies into an incorporeal body which has some of its present physical attributes. But this is still quite different from one’s present bodily existence in the world. (cf. 15:51).¹³² In terms of his use of literary devices here Paul’s line of reasoning in the chapter can be described as ‘deliberative rhetoric’.¹³³ As rhetorical statement the chapter is best understood in terms of its opposition to the *pneumatikoi* or ‘spirit people’. Then, in the final summary point in Chapter 15:58 about ‘working,’ Paul’s rhetoric can also be understood in the light of his underlying theme about the importance of moral behaviour. This priority is threaded through all of Paul’s correspondence. Morality has to be worked at. It is not just a “given”.

Chapter 15 begins by reminding “the brothers” about the gospel that Paul had preached to them. He knew the Christian idea of the resurrection of the body had emotional appeal to pagans.¹³⁴ Here, he insists that such a “saving” can only be

¹³² A Katherine Grieb, “Last Things First: Karl Barth’s Theological Exegesis of 1 Corinthians in The Resurrection of the Dead” *Scottish Journal of Theological Ltd*, 56(1):49+64 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003).49.

¹³³ Witherington, “Paul the Lette Writer,” 121.

¹³⁴ Meeks, *The First Urban Christians*, 181.

realized through the gospel that he has preached (15:2). Paul's gospel is about the self-giving of Christ crucified.

In the earlier chapters of 1 Cor., when Paul referred to the itinerant, philosopher preachers (1:17), he expressed his dismay that the Corinthians were putting himself, Apollos and Cephas on the same level as Christ. (1:12) Later in the letter, in 1 Cor. 15:2 he could pick up on this earlier observation about being compared with travelling philosophers and sophists.¹³⁵ He could again recall that he did not have the same showing of oratorical skill as did these preachers. But, as he had pointed out earlier in the letter, it is the crucifixion of the Christ that he preaches and this cannot be expressed in philosophy anyway (cf. 1:17). In the opening verses of chapter 15 people were again reminded of these points.

Paul also points out in 15:3 that the gospel he teaches is based upon the Jewish Scriptures. These Scriptures insist that when a human being is born they are of themselves nothing (in contrast to the Stoic idea).¹³⁶ A person's existence and development therefore is entirely reliant on the active power of God.¹³⁷ He goes on to remind his auditor/readers that the resurrection of Christ was in accordance with the Jewish Scriptures (15:4). His own preaching in turn has been in accord with the teaching of the first apostles who had personally witnessed Christ's resurrection (15:5-7). He also makes the point that he shares in this authority of the first apostles because he also has been an eye witness to the resurrected Christ (v.8). In making this point he harks back to the vision he had of the resurrected Christ on his way to Damascus (Acts 9:5) He also reminds his audience that they

¹³⁵ Downing, *Cynics, Paul and the Pauline Churches*, 85-6.

¹³⁶ Michael Gorman, "Paul's Theology: A Dozen Fundamental Convictions," *Apostle of the Crucified Lord* (Grand Rapids: W. B. Eerdmans, 2004) 144.

¹³⁷ Peter Jones, "Paul Confronts Paganism in the Church: A Case Study of First Corinthians 15," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* (Louisville, Ky: Evangelical Theological Society, Dec. 2006), 731.

themselves have already acknowledged their belief in this resurrection of Christ (v.11),

Thus in the first eleven verses of Chapter Fifteen Paul has recalled key points already developed in the early chapters of the letter. He then goes on to point out that if, as some people are claiming (cf. v.12), there is no resurrection of the dead, then such a position cancels out the fact that Christ rose from the dead. As the scholar Katherine Grieb has pointed out, “they were sawing off the branch on which they were sitting.”¹³⁸

In the verses to follow here, Paul claims that it is through the resurrection of Christ that other people can be raised, including those Corinthians who are identified with Christ. Death itself is subjected to Christ who in turn is subject to God. Just as it has been through the power of God that Christ has been raised so also it is through the power of God that “members’ of Christ (cf. members of his “cosmic” body) will be also raised (15:20-28). Contrary to the Stoic idea, people cannot assume that their soul will live on without such a saving power of God.

It is at this point in the argumentation of Chapter 15 that Paul sharply rebukes those who say ‘Let us eat and drink today; tomorrow we shall be dead’ (1 Cor. 15:32) The writer William Walker points out that this quote fits in with pagan Epicureans. The quote is also found in *Ecclesiastes* 8:15 and in *Isaiah* 22:13 where the mentality behind it is strongly criticized.¹³⁹ Walker suggests that this reference in Chapter 15 is actually an annotation . However while the quote may appear to break into the logic of the text, it does fit into the wider context of Paul’s attack on pagan philosophy. Paul is also making the

¹³⁸ Grieb, “Last Things First: Karl Barth’s Theological Exegesis of 1 Corinthians in The Resurrection of the Dead” 62.

¹³⁹ William O Walker Jr., “1 Corinthians 15:29-34 as a Non-Pauline Interpolation,” *The Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 69 (Washington: Catholic Biblical Quarterly Association of America, Jan. 2007), 100.

graphic point here, that it is not just outsiders but actually some members of the community that have such a disrespectful attitude towards their own body. And, their attitude is affecting the whole group from within. The quotation therefore acts as an indirect accusation that such a position is a pagan position. It does not belong in a Jewish or Christian attitude. The quotation in this part of the letter also recalls the warning in 1 Cor. 5:6 about the damaging effect of yeast in dough and Paul is urging that such “yeast” should be expunged. Thus on the one hand he does not say directly in Chapter 15 that the people with this attitude should be expelled from the community, partly because he is explicitly addressing these people rather than the whole community. But the yeast image is implied here and he further recalls it with the words “Bad friends ruin the noblest people.” (15:33). He then states “you should be ashamed” (15:34).

Paul’s reprimands, focused around the quotation “Let us eat, drink and make merry,” demonstrate that the attitude criticized here, is more than just a mistaken or “over-realised eschatology” as described by writers such as Charles Talbert.¹⁴⁰ Historically, an attitude of disinterest in the body and even contempt for it, eventually led to Gnosticism and this almost destroyed the Church in the first few centuries of its existence.¹⁴¹

The attitude being dissected here in the letter is the idea that one’s body is in itself an impediment to the release of one’s spirit. Paul saw that such a disinterest in the body within the Corinthian church, had the potential to lead to a rejection of the body altogether. As Leander Keck says:

¹⁴⁰ Charles H. Talbert, *Reading Corinthians. A Literary and Theological Commentary on 1 and 2 Corinthians* (New York, NY: Crossroad, 1987), 9.

¹⁴¹ Robert C. Broderick, *The Catholic Encyclopedia* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Inc, 1975), 241-2.

Paul shares the early Christian understanding of Spirit as eschatological gift of power; the divine presence is a gift received, not an essence released. (Rom 8:151 Cor. 2:12; Gal. 3:2).¹⁴²

It is here at this point in Chapter 15 Paul again draws on points already made in the earlier part of the letter. In Chapter 2 he had developed at length his understanding of the *pneuma* or “spirit” at length. It was in this chapter that he attempted to confront, as well as build on, the idea of the Stoic “divine spark.”¹⁴³ His reprimand about “eat drink and make merry” in 15:33 was in that sense already preceded by his earlier clarification about spirit. In chapter 2 he explained that the *pneuma* with which people are born, is the spirit by which they know themselves (2:11). On the other hand people can only know God by the Spirit or *pneuma* of God. This Spirit of God has been given to them but it is also independent of them (2:13). The writer Clink Tibbs points out that the grammatical shifts in the meaning of the root word *pneuma* in this text of chapter 2 is better understood against the background of a Jewish understanding of “Spirit”. He says this gives a clearer understanding than the Greek understanding at the time of the letter or even in the later Trinitarian doctrine of the church.¹⁴⁴ The Qumran texts also have parallels here.¹⁴⁵

It is demonstrated in such texts that the idea that one is free from moral restraint because the body of itself has no meaning, as expressed in 15:33, has no place in Christian thinking.

¹⁴² Leander E. Keck, *Paul and His Letters*, Proclamation Commentaries, 2nd ed., ed. Gerhard Krodel (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1988), 103.

¹⁴³ cf. Jerome Murphy_O’Connor, *Pneumatikoi* (Oxford: Oxford University Press), I:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199592104.003.0010, <http://www.oxfordscholarship.com/view/10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199592104.01.0001/acprof-9780199592104-chapter-10> [accessed 20 May 2016].

¹⁴⁴ Clint Tibbs, “The Spirit (World) and the (Holy) Spirits amongst the Earliest,” *The Catholic Biblical Quarterly*, 70 (Washington: Catholic Biblical Quarterly Association of America, April 2008), 313.

¹⁴⁵ Meeks, *The First Urban Christians*, 177.

Paul needed to demonstrate further that it is moral living that identifies people with Christ and enables them to live on in Christ after death. He therefore needed to clarify what such a “living on after death” actually meant. He challenges his critics. In the text of Chapter 15, there is evidence that he knows the very wording of erosive statements on this subject that were being made by misled members of the community. In verse 35 he says “Someone may ask, “How are dead people raised?” Apparently the people asking this question were more comfortable with the idea that their soul would live on beyond death anyway because of their possession of a “divine spark.” This idea of the “divine spark” also meant that one’s body could be easily discarded and there would not be a need for it to be raised. Also, underneath the question of “How are dead people raised?” (v. 35) lies an uneasy truth about the present, historical situation. Even though five hundred people may have seen the resurrected Christ and even though some of these people had now died, as Paul recalled in 15:6, there was as yet little evidence that any of these deceased people had actually been “raised.”¹⁴⁶ Paul needed to counter the lack of evidence on this matter.

In dealing with the question “How are dead people raised?” (15:35) he uses the analogy of a seed which has one appearance when planted but which then changes. He says “to each kind of seed its own body.” (15:36-38) The auditors/readers of the letter could not deny changes in the appearance of a seed. Moreover this fitted in with Plato’s theory of forms. It was likely they were familiar with this theory as they had a Greek philosophic background.¹⁴⁷ A well

¹⁴⁶ Grieb, “Last Things First: Karl Barth’s Theological Exegesis of 1 Corinthians in The Resurrection of the Dead,” 62.

¹⁴⁷ cf. Michael Vlach, “Plato’s Theory of Forms” *Theological Studies* (<http://www.theologicalstudies.org/resource-library/philosophy-dictionary/158-platos-theory-of-forms> [accessed 28th May 2016].

known example of an ideal form for instance is the triangle which can be expressed in different ways.

In Paul's imagery of the seed he again takes the opportunity to remind people that it is only through the power of God that any change takes place at all (v.38) Thus he again insists that any transformative change comes about because of the "outside" action of God. This contrasts with the more "static" understanding of paganism and Greek thinking.¹⁴⁸

Paul prepared for his metaphor of a seed being transformed in Ch 15 37-8 by a metaphor used in Chapters 3 and 4 of the letter. In Chapter Three he had introduced the metaphor of a building (3:10). On the one hand this was a reminder to the *pneumatikoi* that their physical body has similarities to a building which in turn has had a beginning. He then went on to compare the body with God's Temple (3:16) which is sacred because of God's presence in it. Such a presence is reliant on the will and action of God and it is independent of those who may have built the bricks and mortar there.¹⁴⁹ Later on, in Chapter 15, the earlier teaching about the sacred Temple is implied in his teaching about the transformation of the body by God. People of the time, even in Corinth, would understand the significance of this building/Temple metaphor. Pagan converts at Corinth may not have seen the Jerusalem Temple. But this was known and esteemed throughout the Empire.¹⁵⁰ It was also likely that Corinthians knew of Jewish belief in the sacredness of the Temple. For instance Jews were prepared to face death when the Emperor Gaius Caligula was threatening

¹⁴⁸ Cf. Guido Catogero, Lawrence H. Starkey, "Eleaticism Philosophy" *Encyclopedia Britannica* (USA: Encyclopedia Britannica Inc.) <https://www.britannica.com/topic/Eleaticism> [accessed 24 Oct 2018].

¹⁴⁹ Neyrey, *Paul, in Other Words*: 50.

¹⁵⁰ Lee I. Levine *Judaism and Hellenism in Antiquity: Conflict or Confluence?* (Peabody, Massachusetts: University, 1988), 5.

to put his image in the Temple around 40 CE.¹⁵¹ The Corinthian letters were likely to be written fairly soon after this event in the early 50's CE.¹⁵² Thus Paul's allusion to the Jerusalem Temple would have been understood.

Some scholars such as William O Walker may consider that parts of Ch 15 such as vv. 29-34 to be an interpolation.¹⁵³ This includes a reference to facing "the wild animals at Ephesus" v. 33. But for Paul, as with many Jews, there is a readiness to face death when the stakes are high. In Galatians 6:13 for instance he contemptuously talked of people wanting to force circumcision on converts apparently in order to avoid being persecuted themselves. It was apparently thought at that time (before the destruction of Jerusalem) that being a Jew would be safer for them. His reference to Ephesus in 15:32 "What do I gain if, humanly speaking, I fought with beasts at Ephesus? If the dead are not raised.." is a contrast between his own disposition which is 'to the death' as contrasted with that of the self-satisfied disposition of the *pneumatikoi* whom he is addressing here.

In Chapter 15 of 1 Corinthians, Paul is dealing with the "big picture". He draws on a wide range of practices and rhetorical writing skills. As already discussed, as a Jew and especially as a Pharisee, he would be strongly influenced by the "map" of creation as set out in Genesis in which it is claimed everything has its own time and place. His own teaching on the resurrection was not rejecting this Jewish/Pharisaic urge to map the cosmos and a world view. Rather he was making a

¹⁵¹ Global Non-violent Action Database, "Gaius Caligula," (Swathmore, PA: Swathmore College) <http://nvdatabase.swarthmore.edu/content/jewish-peasants-block-construction-statue-gaius-caligula-galilee-40-ce> [accessed 28th May 2016].

¹⁵² B. Ehrman "Paul as pastor," https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pMVatCd_1xM .

¹⁵³ William O Walker Jr., "1 Corinthians 15:29-34 as a Non-Pauline Interpolation," 69.

new map, one that could incorporate people with a Hellenistic background.¹⁵⁴ At the same time this map would be based on the Commandments.

Ultimately Paul finally points out, it is God in his otherness, that determines how resurrection of the body will take place. It could be “in the twinkling of an eye” (15:52).

At the end of Chapter 15 Paul talks about “working” towards resurrection (v.58). He uses the Greek word *ἔργω* meaning “work” in the broad sense. But he also uses the word *κόπος* which includes the meaning of ‘trouble and weariness.’ Thus the word “work” includes both everyday toil for one’s living and also struggles at an ethical level including the task of resisting the ideas of people such as the *pneumatikoi*.

In the overall picture of his life’s work, Paul is setting out a way in which the morality of Judaism and and the philosophy of Hellenism can be incorporated into the one community. In 1 Corinthians, especially Chapter 15, he deals with a tendency amongst those of a Hellenistic-background to tip back into the Stoic idea of the “divine spark” being an inherent part of humanity irrespective of a person’s morality.

This was an important topic for Paul to deal with. The later gospel writers, especially Luke, would point out the-going tendency of some Christians to tip over (or back) into an over-stress on idealism. In such a situation “Ideas” and the mind/spirit would be given priority over morality, whether this be in relation to the human body or creation itself.

Looking back over the centuries, this has been an on-going problem in Christianity and in those societies that Christianity has influenced. The tendency towards excessive ideals has re-

¹⁵⁴ Neyrey, “ Paul in Other Words, 53.

emerged in different guises. At present it is often labelled with the suffix of “...ism.”

Part 2 of this research project presents an extended précis of *Truth and Method*, a book written by the philosopher Gadamer. In the précis a parallel emerges to some extent between the “divine spark” of the Stoics and the spark of “genius” that was applauded by leaders of the European Enlightenment from around C18th. One is reminded that within Christianity, elements of Greek philosophy and the need to name this live on.



Chapter Six

The Synoptic Gospels of Mark, Matthew and Luke

Continuing the Morality “Map” of Paul

a. The Gospel of Mark – 70 AD

The writings of Paul’s immediate successors are an indication of the success of his eschatological teaching about morality, that is, insofar as people identify with the morality of Christ, so also will they share in his resurrected life.

There is a fairly general agreement amongst scholars that Mark’s gospel was the first gospel to be written down. The year was about 70 AD when Jerusalem was under siege by the Roman Army. It was a traumatic time for the Jews and followers of Jesus alike.¹⁵⁵

Apart from the time the gospel was written, there is more uncertainty about the place where it was written down. Perhaps it was Rome.¹⁵⁶ The text has indications of a recent fearful history of Mark’s background community. This would coincide with Christian fortunes in the 60’s CE. In 67 AD after the fire of Rome, Nero the Emperor blamed the Christians for the catastrophe and had them cruelly

¹⁵⁵ Brendan Byrne, *A Costly Freedom: A Theological Reading of Mark’s Gospel*, (Strathfield: St Pauls Publications, 2008), xv.

¹⁵⁶ Byrne, *A Costly Freedom*: xvii.

persecuted.¹⁵⁷ As soldiers went from house to house looking for Christians there were betrayals amongst community members. Fear was paramount and the text reflects this (cf. Mk 10:32-34). Then, around the time of writing the gospel there was disaster amongst the Jews world- wide. Stories about the Jerusalem siege and destruction of the Temple and its whole system of worship would have circulated. Some of the scenes of this disaster appear to be described in the text of Mark's gospel. (Mk 13:1).

In the wider context of the writing of Mark's gospel, stories from the life of Jesus had been talked about during the nearly forty year period between the life of Jesus and the writing down of the gospel (ca. 33-70 AD). For the purpose of re-telling these stories, they would have been compiled and edited at a verbal level. As with other story-telling they would have been re-told and "performed" in house churches.¹⁵⁸ Mark would have been able to work from such a story base.

As a follow-on from our previous discussion of Paul's isolation of three key social commandments in his teaching, the question can be raised. Was there a section or sections in Mark's gospel where these three social commandments are also isolated out and Mark continues on with Paul's "eschatological" interpretation of them? To recall, the three commandments are "Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal?" (These are numbers five, six and seven in Traditional Catholicism).¹⁵⁹

Other factors would also be in play here. For instance in the case of Paul's teaching as in First Corinthians (cf. 1 Cor.3:10), he puts himself forward as a model of morality. In

¹⁵⁷ Cf. Moloney, Francis, J. *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, evangelist* Peabody, Massachusetts, Hendrickson Publishers 2004, 9.

¹⁵⁸ Antoinette Clark Wire, *The Case for Mark Composed in Performance* Biblical Performance Criticism 3 (Eugene, Oregon: Cascade Books, 2011).

¹⁵⁹ Plenary Council, *Catechism*: 28.

the case of Mark, as one would expect, Jesus himself is put forward as the model of morality cf. “come follow me” in Mark 10:21.

This leadership challenge by Jesus in Chapter 10 needs consideration. Consider the earlier context of this challenge in Mark 9:2-8. The section when Jesus takes his leadership team of disciples, Peter, James and John up a mountain. Here Jesus is transformed and his garments become “white as snow” (v. 3). Jesus appears to be speaking to Moses who gave the law to the Jews and Elijah the prophet who went beyond Judaism as when he provided for a non-Jewish widow (Lk.. 4:25).

When Jesus was being transformed on the mount – with his garment “white as snow” there was a voice from heaven identifying him “This is my beloved Son.” (v. 7). After this, in the text, Jesus and the disciples come down from the mountain. Then they are met by another father and son (9:17-18). There is a contrast here. The son here was possessed by a demon (v. 18). The disciples were trying to get rid of the demon while the father looked on helplessly. Jesus intervenes and banishes the spirit. The text then goes on to talk about the situation of children in general (v. 36).. The need for a stable family background is stressed (10:2-16) as also the need for good example (v. 42).

It is in this setting that Jesus points out it is children who have a leadership role in the “kingdom of God”. Thus he says “Unless you become as little children you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.” (10:15). Mark’s introduction of “the child” image here, as a model of morality, appears to be a new element to Paul’s teaching. But we still find Paul’s approach is being developed.

Next in Mark’s Chapter 10, a man comes forward wanting to follow Jesus. At first Jesus tells him to keep the

commandments and here we are given an echo of Paul in Romans when he explicitly mentions the three key social commandments (Rom. 13:9) In Mark 10 Jesus says

You know the commandments: Do not kill, Do not commit adultery. Do not steal. Do not bear false witness. Do not defraud. Honour your father and mother.
(Mk 10:19)

The man says he has kept the commandments from his youth. (Mk 10:20) The text then says that Jesus looked at the man with love (v.21). Then he challenged him “Go sell what you have and give to the poor and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come follow me.” (v. 21). As it turns out in the story, the man was quite wealthy. He did not want to take up this invitation and he went away sad (v. 22).

If we analyze out the invitation given by Jesus here it not only appears to be a continuation but also development of the approach of Paul. The man is asked to sell what he has and give the money to the poor. In this sense this is a “reversal” of the commandment “Thou shalt not steal.” At the practical level, if the man has no possessions then he is not in a position to set up a household and family. Thus there is an echo here of Paul’s teaching here about optional celibacy in 1 Corinthians Chapter 7. Also without being married the man would be a step further away from the likelihood of falling into adultery (cf. “Thou shalt not commit adultery.”(v. 19)) Jesus invites the man to “come follow me.” (v. 21). In such case the man would be devoting his whole life, like Jesus, to the betterment of others. He would be helping them towards their own self-determination. In that sense this is a call to a lifestyle that is the opposite of “Thou shalt not kill” (cf. v. 19).

Such a “reversal” of the three commandments, turns the negative prohibition of the commandments into a positive

lifestyle that is centred around the following of Jesus and towards an identification with him. Thus in the case of the three commandments which Paul had consistently isolated and moved towards “reversing”, we find that Mark the first gospel writer, is taking up the same theme and developing it further.

Historically speaking, we can probably assume that Jesus actually did say something on these lines to a man who wanted to do morally better in his life. Yet the line between leaving “everything” and what actually happened in the life of the early apostles is not quite so clear. In 1 Cor. 9:4-6 Paul refers to the custom of the apostles who took their wives with them on their travels. Only he and Barnabas were exceptions to this practice. Also, presumably the apostles had children. One imagines that responsibility towards children would not allow the first disciples to sell absolutely everything they owned. For instance we read of Jesus going into the house of Simon’s mother-in-law. (Mk 1:29-31). We could wonder to what extent Simon Peter was connected to the ownership of this house? Also there is an implied mention of property at Bethsaida, the township of Philip, Andrew and Peter (Jn. 1:44). Jesus and his followers would go there for a retreat (cf. Mk 6:45).

It would appear that over the forty year interim period between the life of Jesus and the writing of the gospel, the invitation of Jesus to follow him had become more crystallized. There were now followers of Jesus who did not have possessions, a home and family or worldly power because they had committed themselves to a following of Christ. There is a reference in Acts to a ceremony in the Temple when there were people taking a “vow” (Acts 21:23). As it turned out this ceremony “blew up” when Jews accused Paul of taking a pagan into the Temple for the ceremony (he didn’t!) (Acts 21:28). Secular authorities had to intervene on this occasion to save Paul. But the reference to the taking of

a vow suggests that commitment to a following of Christ was becoming more formalized .

Yet the choice of such a lifestyle remains the response to an invitation. It follows the pattern set out by Paul who had insisted that decisions on the lines of lifelong celibacy would need to be at the instigation of the Holy Spirit. This insistence in 1 Cor. 7 on free choice, parallels Paul's conditions set out in II Corinthians relating to donations. When he is asking people to help the church elsewhere in 2 Cor. 9:5 he insists that this donation is optional.

In the text of Mark, the call to follow Jesus in an 'idealized' way also remains an invitation and an option.

In the setting of the invitation by Jesus in Mark 10 the theme of "the child" is continued. When the disciples ask Jesus about their own status, when they say they have indeed followed him, Jesus uses the term "children" to address them (Mk 10:24). In the gospels there are more such references to "the child" as a model of morality, for example Mt. 5:9, Mt. 18:2-5, Mt. 19:13-15, Lk. 9:46-48, Lk. 18:15-17 etc. Also, at the beginning of both Matthew and Luke's gospels a whole introductory section is devoted to the story of Jesus as a child.

Why the emphasis on "the child"? One point that could be raised here is that as compared with the three key social commandments and the invitation to the (young?) man in Mark Ch. 10, the child is without possessions, a sex life and/or physical power. In a more modern terminology the child in this sense is without money, power or sex, arguably the three key causes of social problems. Mark sets out a ground work for the exercise of a "reversal" of the three key social commandments and "prohibitions". This is used as a springboard for Matthew and Luke.

b. The Gospel of Matthew:

An Exegesis of Mt 5:17-20 and 10: 5-15

The Gospel of Matthew was written from the basis of a Jewish community around 85 CE.¹⁶⁰ It appears to continue on with the focus of Paul on three key social commandments and it develops Paul's approach to these even further.

The following historical critical exegesis of parts of chapters five and ten in Matthew's gospel is largely based on a chapter already published in the on-line book *Is There a Critique of Hellenism in the Gospels?*¹⁶¹. However the material is relevant to this discussion about Christian morality as well.

Both the passages of Mt 5:17-20 and 10:5-15 have an anomaly in them. In the Mt. 5 Jesus talks about the need for a strict observance of the commandments cf. "not one jot or tittle" (to be broken) (Mt. 5:18). But a closer look at his teaching here shows there is a strong stress on attitude rather than observance as such. Thus on a first look it looks as though his teaching is aligned with the meticulous observance taught by the Pharisees. But there is something extra and different here.

A second anomaly to be discussed later is that of the sending by Jesus of his twelve disciples to prepare the way for his own mission. Jesus tells the disciples they are only to go to "the lost house of Israel", presumably Jews (Mt. 10:5). But a closer look at the context of this missionary outreach shows

¹⁶⁰ Daniel J. Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, (Collegeville, Minn. Liturgical Press, c. 1991), 22.

¹⁶¹ Michelle Nailon, *Is there a Critique of Hellenism in the Gospels?* (Melbourne: Project Employment, 2016)

that almost half of the inner circle of Jesus, that is, the twelve disciples, had been heavily involved with the fishing industry around the Sea of Galilee. This geographical area was also where Jesus was to cross back and forth across the sea. Because of the social connections with the fishing industry, the industry itself would be the base where the disciples were preparing a “cradle community” The anomaly here is that it appears on the surface that the “cradle community” prepared by the twelve would be based on Jewish membership. True. But it would also be and arguably would be mainly based on the socio-economic network that was operating in a particular industry. In this sense the community so formed was based on a a secular context rather than a Jewish one.

Exegesis of Matthew 5:17-20

To return to Matthew Chapter 5. The point at issue here is observance of “the law”. The verses of Matthew 5:17-20 in fact provide a summary of the tension that law observance was causing for the community of Matthew. Jesus is saying that he did not come to abolish the law or the prophets but to fulfil them (Mt. 5:17). This stated position is a warning to people (such as Jewish scribes) who may be teaching what Jesus would have considered to be a wrong approach to the commandments. Historically, teaching the commandments was a work of the scribes.¹⁶² But Jesus warns in the gospel that his own approach to the commandments differs from that of the scribes and Pharisees. The same warning applied in the time of Matthew. The Pharisees in particular were taking on the role of leadership in the Jewish world and the scribes were involved here.¹⁶³

¹⁶² R. T. France, *The Gospel of Matthew*, The New International Commentary on the New Testament (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 2007), 189.

¹⁶³ Ulrich Luz *New Testament Theology: The Theology of the Gospel of Matthew*, J. Bradford Robinson, trans.(Cambridge:Cambridge University Press, 1993), 40.

Scholars such as Francis Moloney say the gospel of Matthew was written between 80-90 CE.¹⁶⁴ Recall the Temple of Jerusalem had been destroyed in 70 CE and the remnants of Jewish leadership would have fled to places such as Antioch where there was a large community of Jews. It is thought Matthew's gospel was written in the same locality.¹⁶⁵ Matthew's background community therefore would have had a large membership of Jewish Christians.¹⁶⁶ Who were the Jewish Christians?

At the time of Jesus the Jews had aligned themselves with a range of sub-groups. For instance there were the Herodians, the Essenes, the Sadducees, the priestly caste, the Zealots and so on. Such people would have thought that their base identity was Jewish. Thus they were Jews who belonged to this or that sub-group for example Jewish Zealots. At the time of Matthew, members of his community were also likely to think the same way – despite the efforts of Paul to take a different approach, for example with regards to circumcision. In any case, for many Jewish Christian converts they would have already been circumcised so this would not be an issue for them. They could still think themselves as being Jewish first of all.

There were some advantages to having a Jewish background when trying to understand the teaching of Jesus. For instance they were already familiar with the Old Testament and this should have helped in their understanding of teaching about “fulfilment”. At the same time they were conscious of their

¹⁶⁴ Francis J. Moloney, *A Body Broken for a Broken People: Eucharist in the New Testament* (Melbourne: Collins Dove, 1990), 37.

¹⁶⁵ Luz *New Testament Theology*, 18.

¹⁶⁶ Luz, *New Testament Theology*,: 147.

wider Gentile environment. Matthew for instance shows a familiarity with the Greek Septuagint¹⁶⁷

Matthew's gospel argues that Jewish Christians believed Jesus had indeed fulfilled the prophets.¹⁶⁸ In this sense they need not be so reliant on Jewish structures that taught that such fulfilment was still to come. Even while Matthew shows his appreciation of its heritage the Jewish Christians needed to feel more independent of Judaism as such,. Some scholars, for example Ulrich Luz say that by this time these people were no longer attending the synagogue. Also at the same time more people of a Gentile background with only a limited knowledge of Jewish heritage were joining the community. This comingling would have meant that Jewish Christians in the community would be feeling and were being viewed by the Jewish mainstream as being more cut off still from their own heritage.¹⁶⁹ Matthew set out to assure them of their own valid identity.

Return to the text of 5:17-20 in particular. When a closer look is given to the text it is realised these sentences rely on their fuller context if they are to be understood. Luz points out the need for reading a passage in its wider context is a characteristic of Matthew's writing.¹⁷⁰

At the same time there is an anomaly in the verses themselves in Mt. 5:17-20. On the one hand Jesus is putting forward a stress on the detail of the commandments, "not one letter, not one stroke of a letter," (5:18). But in his disputes with the Pharisees he upbraids them for their own burdensome focus on the detail of the law cf. "They tie up heavy burdens, hard to

¹⁶⁷ William Richard Stegner, "The Temptation Narrative: A Study in the Use of Scripture by Early Jewish Christians." *Biblical Research* 25 (1990), 7.

¹⁶⁸ Anonymous. "The Jews in the New Testament: The Gospel According to Matthew." *Scripture in Church* 38, no. 149 (2008),125.

¹⁶⁹ Luz, *New Testament Theology*, 144.

¹⁷⁰ Luz, *New Testament Theology*, 2.

bear, and lay them on people's shoulders" (Mt. 23:4). He accuses the Pharisees of failure to keep the real law. "You brood of vipers. Who warned you to fly from the retribution that is coming?" (Mt. 3:7)

The fuller context of the passage, leading on from the Beatitudes (Mt. 5:1-12), shows that there is a connection in 5:17-20 between the detail of the law and the spirit of the law. There is therefore an intermediate point about the people being addressed as being like "salt" (vv. 13-16) and this fits with the emphasis on the spirit of the law. Like good salt affecting all of the food, so a strong spirit in a community affects and strengthens everyone there.

The verses that follow 5:17-20, also give a clarification about what is meant by keeping the spirit of the law. Again there is a focus on the three key social commandments. First there is mention of murder cf. "You shall not kill..." (v. 5:21) This, Jesus points out, extends to the attitude one has towards others cf. "Everyone who is angry with his brother shall be liable to judgment" (5:22) Then following this segment, in verses 27-32 Jesus deals with the attitude needed for observing the commandment of "You shall not commit adultery." Here, he accuses "everyone who looks at a woman lustfully....." (v. 28). Then, in the next group of verses (5:33-37) there appears to be an elaboration on the attitude needed behind "You shall not steal." In relation to this, Jesus says "if any one would sue you and take your coat let him have your cloak as well" (v. 40). He continues on "Give to him who begs from you, and do not refuse him who would borrow from you" (v. 42). There is even a challenge here to let go of one's material goods even if one needs them.

The verses to follow apparently throw out an even greater challenge in relation to these commandments. Jesus says, "Do not resist one who is evil. But if any one strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also" (v. 39) On the level of

practicality one could wonder about this behaviour and it appears rhetorical hyperbole is being used here. But at the same time, given the context with its quote about an “eye for an eye and tooth for a tooth” (v. 38) the hyperbole provides an effective prohibition against revenge and pay back. Rather it endorses the constant theme in the gospels about forgiveness. Forgiveness is primarily about attitude. Harper’s Commentary argues that these verses are about love ¹⁷¹

There is also a connection here with Romans 13:8-10 when Paul is saying the commandments are summed up in “you must love your neighbour.” Love and forgiveness are both based on attitude. Attitude is being incorporated here as being intrinsic to an observance of the commandments.

Luz points out that Matthew’s gospel has an approach that groups things into three’s. ¹⁷² In 5:20-42 for instance one is again reminded of the three key social commandments listed by Jesus in Mark 10:19. There is a parallel with Mark here, in the sense that both Mark and Matthew require the followers of Christ to push beyond external observance of the commandments. Consider the words in Mark “You lack one thing” (Mk 10:21). These were addressed to the man who had said he had kept the commandments from his youth. Jesus then challenges him to “Go sell what you have and give to the poor and you will have treasure. Then come and follow me.” (Mk 10:21). This suggests that if people only follow the “letter” of the law (as taught for example by the Pharisees) they are also lacking in something. In Mark’s gospel Jesus throws out a challenge to reach beyond the commandments. In Matthew Chapter 5 Jesus elaborates on the spirit and attitude that is required beyond their observance.

¹⁷¹ James L. Mays gen. ed. *The HarperCollins Bible Commentary*, (San Francisco: Harper and Rowe, 1988), 956.

¹⁷² Luz, *New Testament Theology*, 117-121.

The verses of Matthew 5:17-20 have particular relevance to the historical situation of Matthew's Church which was possibly in Antioch. Antioch was featured in the Council of Jerusalem in about 51 CE.¹⁷³ Acts 15 tells of Paul's close association with the Church there. But in the letter to the Galatians, which included Antioch, Paul tells of how he is now estranged from this community. "O foolish Galatians! Who has bewitched you...?" (Gal. 3:1a.) He upbraids Peter (and Barnabas) about eating apart from Gentile Christians (Gal. 2:11). In Antioch there was an "over-observance" in external law.

For a re-cap on the environment here, recall some of the discussion about Galatia in the pages above. As regards Galatia, the scholar Jerome Murphy O'Connor considers that the group of people exerting pressure for eating apart may have been separate from those persuading the Galatians to undergo circumcision.¹⁷⁴ The historical background shows the Emperor Nero came into power in 54 CE. Carl R. Holladay estimates that Galatians was written shortly after this in 54-55 CE.¹⁷⁵ Paul implies "the circumcisers" were apparently trying to avoid potential persecution by getting Gentile Christians to join mainstream Judaism (Gal 6:12). However after 70 CE and the Roman army's destruction of Jerusalem, the situation would have shifted. It was now Jews who would have fear of persecution and death. Therefore, one could assume that around 80-90 CE. social pressure in the Antiochan church towards circumcision was likely to be more relaxed. Also, as stated above, many of the church members would already be circumcised so this was not an issue for them

With the circumcision debate largely behind them, Matthew was in a position to deal more fully with the antinomianism

¹⁷³ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 51.

¹⁷⁴ Murphy O'Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, 141.

¹⁷⁵ Holladay, *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament: Interpreting the Message and Meaning of Jesus Christ*, 382-383.

accusations (i.e. rejection of established moral laws) that had been levelled at Paul and indirectly at Jesus.

He could now elaborate on the meanings of “fulfilment” (v. 17) and “righteousness” (v. 20) and show how these were connected to “attitude.” The theme of “fulfilment” actually stretches from the first Chapter in Matthew (cf. Isaiah 7:14) until Chapter twenty-eight when the disciples are challenged to go out into the whole world and make disciples of others (Mt. 28:19) . Thus the idea of fulfilment pervades the gospel and is intrinsic to its themes.

The use of the word “righteousness” also has relevance here. It reflects the efforts of groups such as the Pharisees and Qumran members at the time of Jesus to distinguish themselves favourably from others. But Matthew’s use of the word “righteousness” in the context of 5:17-20 has a dimension of irony to it. The word does not describe external observance at all.¹⁷⁶ Rather, Jesus is redefining the word in terms of attitude and, the verses to follow “For I tell you, unless your righteousness exceeds that of the scribes and Pharisees, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven.” (v. 20) elaborate on what sort of attitude is needed for “the kingdom of heaven”.

Scholars such as Benjamin Bacon view the text between 5:1 “And he opened his mouth and taught them saying ” and verse 7:23 which says “After Jesus had finished these words” as all being part of the one gospel section.¹⁷⁷ Bacon sees the repetition of this one sentence through the gospel as dividing it up into other sections as well.¹⁷⁸ Thus the meaning of 5:17-20 extends in this sense to the whole of the section of Mt. 5:1-7:23.

¹⁷⁶ cf. *New Jerome Biblical Commentary*, 71.

¹⁷⁷ Benjamin Bacon, *Studies in Matthew* (London: Constable, 1930).

¹⁷⁸ Bacon, *Studies in Matthew*

Ironically the scholar Luz argues for a fuller reading of Matthew's text (cf. Bacon's sections). Yet Luz appears to consider 5:17-20 on its own when comparing Matthew's approach with that of Paul. He says "The Matthean principle of fulfilment of the Law and the Pauline principle of freedom from the Law, are mutually exclusive."¹⁷⁹ In fact he suggests that in the large metropolis of Antioch, Matthew barely knew of Paul.¹⁸⁰ Luz may see Matthew and Paul as being, in a sense, at odds with one another. But in the full context of the section from 5:2 to 7:28 Matthew is actually putting forward a positive interpretation of the law, one that is based upon attitude. And, this helps to clarify Paul's teaching about law rather giving an opposite viewpoint to his approach.

In Matthew's Chapter Five there is an implication here that the disciples of Jesus in Matthew's gospel are more advanced in being "able to penetrate the mystery of Jesus' identity" than were the disciples in Mark's gospel.¹⁸¹ Again, one is reminded here of the wider context of the chapter. After the Beatitudes in Matthew 5:2-10 Jesus says "Do not think that I have come to abolish the law and the prophets," (5:17) and here he puts out challenges that go beyond the external observance of the law.¹⁸² For instance he says "If your right hand causes you to sin cut it off and throw it away..."(5:30). Even if hearers/auditors of Matthew were to take this sentence metaphorically, there is still the implication that severe self-discipline is part of the culture of Matthew's community and the disciples are being told to spread this approach. Such challenges were likely to arouse hostility amongst people who either wanted to downplay the observance of the Commandments altogether and/or those who only wanted detailed external compliance with Jewish law. With the

¹⁷⁹ Luz, *New Testament Theology*, 152.

¹⁸⁰ Luz, *New Testament Theology*, 147.

¹⁸¹ Donald Senior *What are they Saying about Matthew?* (New York: Paulist Press, 1996), 91.

¹⁸² Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 17.

emphasis here on an ascetic attitude, not only righteousness would be required of the followers of Jesus but a 'greater righteousness.'¹⁸³

There is relevance here to the book by Dale Allison called *The New Moses*. Allison points out a comparison between Matthew's text and the Hellenistic tradition that stressed the need for teachers "to live as they taught." Allison notes how Socrates was the great model for Hellenists. Philo (a Jewish philosopher) transferred this sort of status to Moses. Matthew on the other hand "gives the palm" (of this position as a model) to Jesus. The key point being made here was to establish congruity between word and deed. Thus in Matthew, Jesus is presented as the Torah incarnate and animate law.¹⁸⁴ At the same time there is a shift being taken here from a 'holiness code' to a 'mercy code.' A difference here, it should be noted is that "holiness" relates to one's own spiritual state. "Mercy" on the other hand relates to one's interaction with others. Such a shift would apply to both Matthew's interpretation of the situations of Jesus and the social context of Matthew as well.¹⁸⁵

Again, there is an underlying theme that observance of the law in Matthew's gospel entails a development in one's understanding of the law.

Exegesis of Matthew 10:5-15

Consider another section of Matthew using the method of interpretation called Historical Critical Exegesis. Matthew

¹⁸³ David M. Bossman, "Christians and Jews Read the Gospel of Matthew Today," *Biblical Theology Bulletin* 27, no. 2 (Albany, NY: Biblical Theology Bulletin Inc., 1997), 46.

¹⁸⁴ Dale Allison, Jr, *The New Moses* (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, c. 1993), 145.

¹⁸⁵ Klyne Snodgrass, "Matthew's Understanding of the Law," *Interpretation: A Journal of Bible and Theology*, 96 (Richmond Va.: Union theological Seminary, 1992), 368-78.

10:5-15 is in the middle of a gospel section in which Jesus sends his twelve selected disciples to “the poor of Israel”. He warns them not to go to the Gentiles and not to go into Samaritan towns and villages (v. 5). He also provides a “check list” of the ways in which they are to travel (v. 9) and he tells them to respect any hospitality given to them (v. 12-13). On the other hand he tells them to “shake the dust off their feet” if people do not want to hear their message (v. 14). He gives a warning about those who reject the message (v. 15). This passage goes on to warn the disciples of the conflict which is likely to occur when they preach (v. 17), even between family members (v. 21). Matthew concludes this instruction to the twelve disciples with the words “And when Jesus had finished giving instructions to his twelve disciples he went on from there to teach and preach in their cities (Mt 11:1). According to Bacon’s analysis of the gospel, this sentence ends a section.

Most scholars consider that the text of this gospel section 10:5-15 is based on Mark’s gospel, as also a source called Q and also material peculiar to Matthew (M).¹⁸⁶ On a cursory reading, the verses of Mt. 10:5-15 may appear to describe the directions of Jesus as being for on a “one-off” occasion. Yet right through the passage there are constant references to a much wider context. This includes the socio-economic situation in which Jesus, and later Matthew, found themselves. There are also some contradictions here as mentioned above. How so?

On the one hand Jesus tells his disciples not to go to the Gentiles (Mt. 10:5). Yet it appears he himself was using Hellenistic social models when telling the disciples how to behave. For example the disciples would move around in ways that were similar to that of the itinerant Cynic preachers whose philosophic background was from the Greek Stoics¹⁸⁷

¹⁸⁶ Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 5.

¹⁸⁷ Downing, *Cynics, Paul and the Pauline Churches*, 85 pp.

Such similarities imply that in the long term, the message of Jesus and the mission of the disciples would be applicable to Gentile people as well. The passage also includes allusion to the historical friction between Jews and Gentiles that Jesus faced in his own day (cf. 30 CE). There were also similarities here with the historical conflict that was being faced by Matthew and his community (cf. 85 CE).¹⁸⁸ In terms of the immediate text, one can note that the redactions Matthew was making of Mark's text showed up such a relevance to his own situation. Consider. On the one hand Matthew uses Mark's text of 6:8-11 as a base for his text of Mt 10:5-15. But the follow-ups to both texts have a significant difference. On the one hand Mark follows up with the statement "So they went out and preached that men should repent" (Mk 6:12). But Matthew puts a focus on the need to be "wise as serpents and innocent as doves" (Mt 10:16). The implication here, is that the disciples in Matthew's context would be preaching about something that was more likely to arouse hostility than (only) preaching about repentance. We know from the previous chapter five that this would involved teaching about Jesus as fulfilling the law and teaching about how the law should be followed. This was the issue Matthew's community was dealing with.

The statement in Mt 11:1 that Jesus "went on from there to teach and preach in their cities," provides a background social context for the instructions that is given in 10:5-15. In verses 10:5-6 Jesus says "Go nowhere among the Gentiles, and enter no town of the Samaritans, but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." With regards to the historical situation of Jesus in saying this, it not only implies that the disciples were to go to Jewish towns. It also implies that they would go to towns and villages where they already had social networks. These places were "their" cities and Jesus would follow them

¹⁸⁸ Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 22.

there (cf. 11:1). In their outreach to Jews only, the disciples would build on the networks they already had and basic understanding that people had of the Torah and Law. It would be later on they could go out beyond Jewish boundaries or develop people's understanding of the law further.

On one level Matthew reflects on the social situation of Jesus in the 30's CE. Yet right through the passage of Mt 10:5-15 one can detect the voice of Matthew and his own problems fifty years later. Thus in the front of the text we see the mission of Jesus unfolding. In the under-tone of the text we hear the voice of Matthew and his own concerns.

In looking at these verses in Matthew Chapter 10, both threads of concern are being developed at the same time. Again, consider the story at the "front" of the text. Here one needs to be particularly conscious that Matthew is describing a specific methodology of mission that was being taken by Jesus himself.

An article by K. C. Hanson "The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition," has special relevance to such a methodology. Hanson brings a different dimension into a discussion about the missionary journey altogether. She points out that the social setting of the fishing industry around the Sea of Galilee has been underestimated in importance amongst biblical commentators.¹⁸⁹ Consider. Of the twelve disciples sent out, (Mt 10:5), Simon, Andrew, James and John had a fishing background. Also, Philip came from the same town of Bethsaida and he knew Nathanael (John 1:43-50). Also the gospel shows that Jesus is moving around the Sea of Galilee and crossing backwards and forwards across this sea (7 miles by 12.5 miles diameter). As well, and for a while Jesus himself was living at the fishing town of Capernaum.¹⁹⁰

¹⁸⁹ K. C. Hanson, "The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition," *Biblical Theology Bulletin* 27, no. 2 (Albany N.Y.: Biblical Theology Bulletin Inc., 1997), 100.

¹⁹⁰ Hanson, "The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition," 109.

Consider the wider context here. Within the Roman Empire at the time, the fishing industry involved a complex system of networking, not only amongst family members who usually worked together but including amongst labourers and people in other sub-industries. Fishing was regulated by the State. Thus when Jesus was moving amongst a network of acquaintances, many of whom were already known to his disciples, he was also moving within the State-regulated environment of the Greco-Roman Empire. Hanson points out that the sorts of people involved in this fishing industry included a wide range of people. There were fishing families, tax collectors, toll collectors, hired labourers, suppliers of raw goods, fish processors, shippers, carters etc.¹⁹¹ In other words the first area of mission for the disciples was in their own established networks of people and these operated in a state-regulated industry as well as from a family base.

It made strategic, missionary sense for the disciples to give the message of Jesus to people they knew first of all. For a start the disciples could find out who, amongst these people, was interested in their message. Thus, Matthew adds a sentence to Mark's text by saying "Whatever town or village you enter, find out who in it is worthy," (presumably of their message) (v. 11 b). In terms of the mission of Jesus, the twelve disciples were building a base of 'believers' that consisted of the economic community from which they came. Then Jesus himself went around these same towns and villages (11:1). He was addressing these same communities where the disciples had already done a ground work of preparation. This consideration throws a different perspective on the assumption that the disciples "only" followed Jesus. Rather they not only shared in his mission, they prepared for it. In their own social context it was likely people were feeling disillusioned with a minute observance of law, such as taught by the Pharisees and scribes. They were also strained by Roman taxes and

¹⁹¹ Hanson, "The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition," 99.

regulations. Recall that at the Council of Jerusalem Peter stands up and says he found the Jewish law was too burdensome to observe (Acts 15:10). It is likely within the fishing industry around the Sea of Galilee, people were looking for a different interpretation of the law – one that would help them deal with the stresses of their situation.

Matthew 10:5-15 gives further indications that the missionary journey of the twelve key disciples is a “step” in the wider context of the gospel. As well as it being a logical strategy for Jesus to send the disciples to the people they already knew, (v. 5) in the early stages of their discipleship it was also unlikely they had the skills or maturity or self-confidence to face people in either a Gentile community or in Samaritan villages. That is, the twelve disciples were not yet ready to move outside the circles of Judaism.

Again, beneath the surface of the “front” story in Matthew about the inadequacy of the disciples there is the undertone of Matthew’s own situation. He was likely to consider that his own Jewish-based community was in a similar situation of unreadiness. Thus while the “Do not” narrative of the mission is about the twelve disciples, there are hints that Matthew’s community also is being addressed here. Such a hint is apparent when he makes an addition to Mark’s text of Mk 6:8 and says “take no gold or silver” (v. 9). This detail reflects that the “implied readers” (thirty years later) come from a more affluent background as compared with than the background of the twelve disciples themselves.¹⁹²

To return to a comparison between Matthew Chapter 10 and the time of Jesus. One of the problems of the people in the fishing sub-industries in the time of Jesus was the unjust tax system. Roman taxes kept workers at a subsistence level.¹⁹³

¹⁹² Jack Dean Kingsbury, *Matthew as Story*, (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, c. 1988), 125

¹⁹³ Hanson, “The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition,” 100.

Such economic pressures of people in the fishing industry in the 30's CE also throws light on the meaning of the "lost sheep of the house of Israel." As it was, the system of governance was biased towards wealthier families and the Roman Emperor and there was widespread discontent about this ¹⁹⁴ Thus the word "lost" as used by Matthew (v. 6) was likely to include lower classes of the fishing industry whose economic poverty was having a negative affect not only on their religious observance but also on their religious identity. One positive outcome of this would have been that their common plight would have been a factor of bonding amongst them.

An understanding of the fishing social context at the time of Jesus, allows one to accept the likelihood that the wording of the text Mt 10:5-15 does in fact date back to Jesus. It also challenges the idea that the sentence about the "lost sheep of Israel" was added later by Matthew to refer to a mission to Jews because they were scattered amongst the Gentiles. ¹⁹⁵ There could of course be a double meaning here.

In any case, whether the phrase about the lost sheep of Israel was added by Matthew or not, it was likely to have a different meaning for the implied reader of the gospel in the 80's CE as distinct from the twelve disciples in the 30's CE. The implied reader would obviously understand it in terms of their own historical situation.

As already mentioned scholars such as Francis Maloney and Jack Dean Kingsbury reflect on the fact that the the gospel was probably written between 85 and 90 A.D. well after the destruction of the temple in Jerusalem. ¹⁹⁶ This was a time of crisis for Jews or "Israelites" as they were also called. There were attempting to clarify their identity. Also as mentioned

¹⁹⁴ Hanson, "The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition,"103.

¹⁹⁵ Cf. Douglas Hare *The Theme of Jewish Persecution of Christians in the Gospel According to St Matthew* (Cambridge: Cambridge U. P., 1967), 146.

¹⁹⁶ Kingsbury, *Matthew as Story*, 27.

above, it is considered that the gospel could have been written in Antioch where there was a large Jewish population.¹⁹⁷ At that time in the 80's CE the Pharisees were emerging as leaders within the Jewish mainstream. Recall that other leadership groups such as the priests and Sadducees had been wiped out around 70 A.D., as also the Qumran community. It was a time of transition. The Pharisees were gradually replacing the rituals of the Temple with detailed observances in the Jewish home and in the local Synagogue.¹⁹⁸ This same period, when the gospel was being written, was also a time of tension between the Pharisees and the Jewish Christians. Matthew and his community believed it was themselves who could provide the "lost sheep of the house of Israel" with an identity by centring identity on the teachings and person of Jesus. They believed they were the true inheritors of the promises of the Old Testament. In the text of the gospel Matthew constantly referred back to the prophets of the Old Testament to show that Jesus had fulfilled their promises.¹⁹⁹ For Matthew's Jewish community, identity should pivot around the Jesus event and for them righteousness would be defined as fidelity to the teachings of Jesus.²⁰⁰

But the historical situation of Matthew in 85 CE differed from what his community would have preferred. On the one hand the Pharisees were referring back to the leadership they had given about external observance prior to the destruction of the Temple. Matthew and his community on the other hand had shifted instead to a "mercy code" with an emphasis on attitude and love.

¹⁹⁷ Daniel W. Ulrich, "The Missional Audience of the Gospel of Matthew," *The Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 69 (Washington DC: Catholic Biblical Association of America, 2007), 73.

¹⁹⁸ Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 15.

¹⁹⁹ Cf. Snodgrass, "Matthew's Understanding of the Law."

²⁰⁰ Senior, *What are they saying about Matthew*, 74.

Therefore, just as conflict with the Jewish leadership at the time of Jesus was inevitable, so also it was inevitable that in the time of Matthew there would again be conflict with Jewish leadership. In fact, in Matthew's time and around 85 CE a crisis point of conflict was reached. It was then that the Jewish leadership, meeting in Jamnia, put out an edict that required that people who attended the Synagogue to recite a prayer that would curse Christians. Effectively this banned Jewish Christians from the Synagogues altogether.²⁰¹

At the present time there is disagreement amongst scholarship as to whether Matthew's community considered themselves to be still within Judaism or whether by this time they had been expelled from it. But in any case, in such as a situation the community of Matthew could also use the phrase about "the lost sheep of Israel" as referring to themselves.

Scholars such as Saldanarini hold that the gospel was written from within Judaism and for a community that was well acquainted with the Old Testament.²⁰² This familiarity is apparent in the Matthew's reliance on Isaiah's Servant Songs (Isaiah 50)²⁰³ There are also obvious parallels here with a sense of failure.²⁰⁴ One would expect such a feeling of failure would exist amongst Matthew's community as it appeared they had failed to inspire mainstream Judaism with the figure and teaching of Jesus. At the same time Daniel Ulrich points out that in any case in Matthew's account of the mission of the disciples, Jesus said not all the missionaries would be welcomed by all Jews.²⁰⁵ This would also apply later on to Matthew's community.

²⁰¹ Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 15-16.

²⁰² Anthony Saldarini, *Matthew's Christian-Jewish Community* (Chicago: Chicago University Press, 1994), 107.

²⁰³ Vicky Balabanski, "Mission in Matthew against the Horizon of Matthew 24," *New Testament Studies*, 54 (London: Cambridge University Press, 2008), 173.

²⁰⁴ Senior, *What are they Saying about Matthew*, 60.

²⁰⁵ Ulrich, "The Missional Audience of the Gospel of Matthew," 78.

Consider the expectation echoed in Mt 10:17 with the verse, “they will deliver you up to Councils and flog you in their synagogues,” Here the phrase “their synagogues” suggests that by this time Matthew and his community did not consider themselves to be within Judaism at all. Or, at the very least they thought themselves to be one group of Jews as distinct from other groups of Jews.²⁰⁶

In any case Douglas Hare says it is apparent in the text that in its past history, Matthew’s community experienced a painful rupture with mainstream Judaism.²⁰⁷ His community would have been feeling increasing isolation from Judaism as such, because at that time most Israelites were opting to follow the Pharisees rather than the Jewish Christians. Senior points out that besides being rejected from the synagogues and the trauma that resulted from this there was also an influx of Gentiles into the community who had little knowledge or understanding of the Old Testament.²⁰⁸ This point has already been made above.

At the time of Matthew, the Jewish Christian leadership needed to clarify and strengthen the identity of their own community. It is in this context that the instructions given by Jesus in 10:5-15 have particular relevance. In his book *House of Disciples*, Michael H. Crosby says a key to understanding Matthew’s context is to recognise the importance of the household structure in the first century Greco Roman world. On the one hand the disciples (both at the time of Jesus and of Matthew) were establishing a community that extended beyond the blood family. The disciples and their recruits

²⁰⁶ Anonymous, “Biblical Essay, The Jews in the New Testament: The Gospel According to Matthew,” *Scripture in Church* 38, n. 149 (Dublin: Dominican Publications, 2008), 125.

²⁰⁷ Douglas Hare *The Theme of Jewish Persecution of Christians in the Gospel According to St Matthew*.

²⁰⁸ Senior, *What are they saying about Matthew*, 49.

became in effect members of the household of Jesus.²⁰⁹ The missionary task given in Mt 10 was an opportunity for the disciples, whether of the time of Jesus or Matthew, to bond more closely and to strengthen their sense of belonging to the household of Jesus. In terms of the text of Mt 10:5-15 it appears that the standards of asceticism “take no gold etc.” (v. 9) were directed towards the twelve disciples. But it also reflects that a culture of asceticism and a sense of mission was now applied to all, just as identification with Jesus and his mission was also extended to all.

Re-consider the passage of Mt 10:5-15. There appears to be some contradiction in the statement “You received without pay, give without pay.” (v. 7) and then the statement to follow, “the labourer deserves his food.” (v.10). This in fact draws a fine line between the acceptance of hospitality and the abuse of it. Sensitivity was required here, and the disciples were urged to move on if they realised they were not welcome (v. 14).

All of these factors show that the apparently "one off" mission of the twelve disciples was in fact a stage in the progress of the disciples themselves towards establishing a missionary base and obtaining a greater bonding and a greater competence and maturity in their missionary outreach. This step would help prepare them for being given the much larger mission of going out to the whole world, cf. the socio-economic world. Thus there is not a contradiction between Mt 10:5 and later at the end of the gospel in Mt 28:19, when Jesus commissions the disciples to “make disciples of all nations.” John Meier describes the two texts as showing “difference within continuity.”²¹⁰ But Vicky Balabanski claims that in fact the gospel as a whole leads into the “Great Commission” that is delivered by Jesus to the disciples at the gospel’s end in

²⁰⁹ Michael H. Crosby, *House of Disciples: Church, Economics and Justice in Matthew* (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books, c. 1988), ix.

²¹⁰ John Meier, *The Vision of Matthew: Christ, Church and Morality in the First Gospel* (New York: Paulist Press, 1979), 30.

Matthew 28:19.²¹¹ Moreover this development towards a world mission runs parallel to the narrative of the gospel.

When Matthew 10:5-15 is read as a “stage” in a process of disciple maturation the reading alters frequent interpretations of the gospel, that claim that Jesus (and Matthew the writer) at first wanted and tried to convert all the Jews into a following of Jesus. Such interpreters argue that there was later friction about this cf. “they (scribes and Pharisees) bind heavy burdens and put them on the shoulders of people. They are not willing to move these things with their finger.” (Mt. 23:4) This resulted in a change of viewpoint about missionary outreach. It was then thought that if there were to be any sort of future for the good news it would instead be found in a mission to the Gentiles. Amongst scholars there still appears to be some equivocation about this interpretation. Harrington implies that he agrees with this interpretation when he talks of the “rejection of Jesus (by the Jews) resulting in inclusion of the Gentiles.”²¹² This can also imply that in turn, there was a rejection of the Jews (or Israelites), on the part of the Matthean community (cf. “shake off the dust from your feet” Mt 10:14). A further inference could be made here that thinking behind such a verse was that the promises of God in the Old Testament would now go to the Jewish Christians and not the Jews. This apparently fits with the verse of Mt 27:25 “And all the people answered. “His blood be upon us and our children.” But, as Allison points out, “content demands context,”²¹³ Balabanski as well as a majority of other scholars, now refute this view about rejection of the Jews.²¹⁴ In fact Harrington himself contradicts this view when he says that Christians are

²¹¹ Vicky Balabanski, “Mission in Matthew against the Horizon of Matthew 24,” 162.

²¹² Senior, *What are they saying about Matthew*, 19.

²¹³ Dale Allison Jr, *Studies in Matthew: Interpretation past and present*, 147.

²¹⁴ Vicky Balabanski, “Mission in Matthew against the Horizon of Matthew 24,” 174.

obliged to share the message of Jesus with all others including and especially with the Jews.²¹⁵

One of the ways the text of Mt 10:5-15 can be understood as describing a “stage” in the development of the disciples, can be demonstrated by looking at the structure of the gospel as a whole. For some time, starting with Benjamin Bacon, scholars have been aware of his proposal that the gospel is structured by sections of narrative followed by sections of a discourse. Bacon pointed out that the repetition of the words “after Jesus had finished (these words)” is a break in the gospel structure.²¹⁶ He also suggested that the gospel was written as a “new Pentateuch.” Though the latter view has not been widely accepted, his observation of a break in the text “after Jesus had finished these words...” has generally been used as a starting point when attempts are made to work out the gospel structure.²¹⁷ On the other hand, some scholars have seen this wording as a transitional statement only.²¹⁸

An observation to support the idea of a “transition” sentence between one part of the gospel’s structure and another, is to consider a description apparently of a disciple, just before each statement of “After Jesus had finished these words.” Such descriptions appear to show steps being taken by a disciple in the process of becoming more identified with Jesus, “the suffering servant.” Thus consider: Just before the first statement of “after Jesus had finished” in Mt 7:28, there is reference to “a prudent man” (v. 24). The next “break” or transitional clause in Mt 11:1 is preceded by “one of these little ones” (10:42). The next break in Mt 13:53 is preceded by a reference to a “householder” (v. 51). (David Orton suggests

²¹⁵ Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 144.

²¹⁶ Bacon, *Studies in Matthew*, 81.

²¹⁷ Dale Allison Jr., “Matthew: Structure, Biographical Impulse and the *Imitatio Christi*,” in F. Van Segbroeck et al. (eds.), *The Four Gospels, Vol. II* (Leuven: Leuven University Press, 1992), 1203-21.

²¹⁸ Senior, *What are they saying about Matthew*, 27.

that the description about a householder (13:52), which also involves the description of a scribe, may have referred to Matthew himself being a converted rabbi.)²¹⁹ The next “break” in Mt 19:1 is immediately preceded by a reference to forgiveness of one’s “brother” (18:35). Then, just before the next “break” in Mt 26:1, Jesus says failure to help one of these “least ones” (25: 45) is a failure to assist himself. These five transitional descriptions lead to the final commission given in 28:19 when the disciples are challenged to go out and “disciple” others. In such case they could be described here as “disciplers,” especially as the word “disciple” is in the imperative (v. 19).²²⁰ There is a progression from a “prudent” man to “one of these little ones” to a “householder” to “brother” to “one of these least ones” and finally to “disciplers”.

The apparent “breaks” between possible structure sections of the texts thus show a gradual development in the maturity of the disciples and their preparedness to go out to the whole world as mandated by Jesus at the gospel’s end “Go and disciple all nations” (Mt. 28:19). This gradual development description also braces the Jewish-based community of Matthew in the challenge they face as well in looking outward towards “the whole world” and taking with them an understanding of the commandments that would enable all peoples to observe them.

Some Conclusions about Paul and Matthew

Where does this text fit as compared with the isolation of the three key commandments by Paul, writing in the 50’s CE, and

²¹⁹ David Orton, *The Understanding Scribe: Matthew and the Apocalyptic Ideal* (Sheffield, England: Sheffield Academic, 1989).

²²⁰ Ulrich, “The Missional Audience of the Gospel of Matthew,” 71.

later Mark writing in 70 CE.? Recall that in 1 Corinthians Paul had to clarify where the followers of Jesus “fitted” as compared with Hellenists (cf. Gentiles or non-Jews). Many if not most of the latter believed they as persons possessed a “divine spark” which identified them as sharing in divinity as such. Paul had to teach the followers of Jesus they were “possessed” by the Holy Spirit. But the Holy Spirit remained (as in the Jewish tradition) completely “other”. It was when this sort of difference was sorted out that Paul’s teaching about the commandments and morality was given a clearer context. The gospels to follow could then develop this understanding of the presence of the Divine Spirit being within oneself further.

Mark set the groundwork for this in his basic gospel structure (to be discussed further in Part Two of this research project).

With regard to Matthew there are similarities between the situation that is described by Matthew and his own situation later on. But in the case of Matthew his focus was to be on a clarification between Jews and Christian Jews (rather than Christians and Greeks). On the one hand Matthew continued the teaching of Paul in isolating and underlining the importance of three key social commandments, as pointed out in the exegesis of Matthew Chapter 7. Following on from this he then set out to clarify the differences between the followers of Jesus and mainstream Judaism. The context Matthew provides is to stress that the approach of the disciples to the law has to be based on a developing maturity that emphasises the attitude of mercy. This attitude takes precedence over external observances. It is when the followers of Jesus embrace such an attitude that they are able to identify with Jesus and go out into the Gentile world, confident of their own position.

The “cradle community” from which the disciples were to make their outreach consisted of the socio-economic base of a “working world”. Such a base would enable the members of

Matthew's community to make an outreach that was just as relevant to the wider world as it had been for the the disciples of Jesus some decades before them. It was to be in the socio-economic forums of the world that the main issues of Christian morality would be thrashed out.

At this stage, an overview of points covered so far would be appropriate. We considered Paul's practice of isolating out the three key social commandments and encouraging people to practice an idealised version of these if they were called to do this by the Holy Spirit. We saw how Mark also isolated out these three commandments and turned them into the challenge of taking on a lifestyle geared towards the close following of Jesus and identification with him. It was here that an association between this lifestyle and that of the child was introduced. We then saw how Matthew in the section above, also isolated out the three commandments. He insisted that the attitude with which these are practiced is crucial. He also fixed the practice of these commandments into the context of the industrialised world.

Where does Luke, the third synoptic writer, fit in with these developments? Matthew was writing for a Jewish Christian society. Luke was writing for a Gentile Christian society and as one would expect his text, also largely based upon that of Mark, would be geared towards his own auditor-/readership and the special challenges that it faced.

c. The Gospel of Luke

Narrative Exegesis of Luke 4:16-30 and Acts 15

In the gospel of Luke we find there is a continued focus on and development of three key social values, based on the 5th, 6th and 7th commandments. Luke not only threads reference to these commandments into the general text. References can also be found in central themes that he develops as well. The passage of Luke 4:16-30 shows that Jesus, back in his home town of Nazareth, infers that he is about to set up a new, inclusive type of society. This passage also shows that the people of Nazareth reject him. Then an exegesis of Chapter 15 of Luke's Acts shows how the Church Council of Jerusalem based the position of the Church on a re-interpretation of the same three key commandments relating to money, power and relationship. In one sense therefore the observance of these commandments was simplified. But at the same time the "bar" of their observance was raised.

Luke 4:16-30

A Narrative Criticism Interpretation

Luke 4:16-30 does not specifically refer to the three key commandments discussed above. But it shows how Luke, the interpreter of Mark 6:1-2, relates the story of Jesus' return to Nazareth. Luke elaborates on this story to show that Jesus wanted to set up a new type of society which would be inclusive. Also there would be a difference from Judaism in the way the commandments would be observed. In the chapter four story as told by Luke, Jesus goes into the Synagogue, (v. 16) reads from the prophet Isaiah, (v. 17) claims that the time Isaiah prophesied about has now come to pass and he (at first)

pleases the people there (v. 21). However Jesus then says he will not be performing miracles in his hometown as expected (v. 23). He says that he, like other prophets is not recognised as a prophet in his own country (v. 24). He points out that Elijah, the great prophet of Kings 1 and 2 in the Old Testament, was not sent to Jews, but rather to an outcast widow in Sarepta (v. 26) (c/f 1 Kings 17: 9-24). These words of Jesus to the people of Nazareth enrage those in the synagogue (v. 28). They hustle him out of the town to the brow of the hill where the town is situated and attempt to throw him over this (v. 29). However Jesus passes through their midst and goes away (v. 30).

The tightly written, dramatic story is set near the beginning of Luke's narrative of Luke-Acts. It is apparent that Luke the writer deliberately took this story from a later section of Mark's gospel (Chapter 6:1-6 a), and placed it towards the front of his narrative.²²¹ Matthew on the other hand, who also lifted the story from Mark, left it well back in his gospel (c/f Matt 13:53-58).

One wonders why Luke put the story into an introductory position for his Gospel and Acts. The writer L. T. Johnson says that this placement was in order to present Jesus as a specifically prophetic Messiah.²²² Parsons on the other hand notes he is heralding a Jubilee Year (c/f. Lev 25) and the start of a new society.²²³

In the wider context of this story about Nazareth there are references to both the Holy Spirit and to bad spirits. Leading up to the story, in Lk 4:16-30, Luke says Jesus "was full of the

²²¹ William Loader, *The New Testament with Imagination: a Fresh Approach to its Writings and Themes* (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 2007), 192-194.

²²² Luke Timothy Johnson. *The Gospel of Luke*, Vol. 3, Sacra Pagina, (Collegeville: Liturgical Press, 1991), 77.

²²³ Mark Allan Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* (New York/ Mahwah: Paulist Press, 1990), 86./

Holy Spirit”. Then after the temptations by the Devil in the desert, Jesus returned from there “in the power of the Spirit”. In the Nazareth episode Jesus reads from Isaiah “The Spirit of the Lord is upon me” (v. 18). Later on in the gospel, in the passages to follow this episode, there is a further suggestion of the presence of the Holy Spirit because it is said Jesus teaches with authority. (Lk 4:32) Then Jesus confronts an unclean spirit.

Before and after the event at Nazareth, Jesus is preaching in synagogues. On the one hand it cannot be claimed that this wider section of the gospel shows a clear “sandwich” literary structure as described by the narrative critic James Edwards. The Nazareth event does not interrupt a wider story as with a sandwich construction as for example, in Mark when the journey to cure the daughter of Jairus is interrupted by a woman with a bleeding problem (Mark 5:21-43).²²⁴ But there are at least some parallels here with a ‘sandwich’ construction. The Nazareth event occurs between episodes of preaching in synagogues. Also there is the sense of Jesus being “impelled by the Spirit,” prior to his trip to Nazareth and this kind of ‘spiritual’ drive appears to continue later on when he is curing all those brought to him in Capernaum (Luke 4:40). Overall, one gets the sense that the Holy Spirit is very much part of the action and the movement of the story. This compares with the view of Parsons who considers that the main actor in the Lukan narrative is in fact God.²²⁵

The Nazareth story is tightly constructed and has the hall marks of a standard narrative as described by Daniel Marguerat.²²⁶ There is the introductory setting of a synagogue

²²⁴ Cf. James R Edwards “Markan Sandwiches: The Significance of Interpolations in Markan Narratives” *Novum Testamentum 13* (Grand Rapids: William B Eerdmans Publishing Company 1989), 193-216.

²²⁵ Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* 12.

²²⁶ Daniel Marguerat and Yvan Bourquin, *How to Read Bible Stories: An Introduction to Narrative Criticism* (London: SCM Press, 1999), 40-57.

on the Sabbath and the sense of an ordinary meeting taking place there. Even the action of Jesus in taking and reading from a scroll has a sense of normality about it. Then complications (a necessary component of a story) are introduced. Jesus reads from the prophet Isaiah showing Isaiah's preference for an outreach to the marginalised and Jesus identifies with this preference (v.22). In terms of the story structure and its wider context, one would expect an implied reader to think that tensions in the synagogue would increase at this point. In fact the mention is made of all eyes being upon Jesus (Luke 4:20) and this does add to the tension. But it appears that the people in the synagogue of Nazareth were thinking that it was they themselves who fitted into the categories of 'poor,' 'captives,' 'blind,' and 'oppressed' as mentioned in the Isaiah reading. There was therefore acceptance and praise amongst them. But at that point Jesus told the crowd that he did not intend to meet their expectations of performing the same miraculous deeds that they had heard he performed at Capernaum.

In the context of the story it appears the people in Nazareth felt entitled to such miracles because of their prior connections to the family of Jesus. In fact it appears they thought of themselves as being "more deserving" than the people in Capernaum. But in actual fact they were not ready to accept Jesus for who he really was. So in a dramatic turnaround, it appears that Jesus in a sense rejects the people in the synagogue before they reject him. He refuses to conform to their expectations. For the implied readers of the gospel (possibly Gentile Christians in Syria) they themselves are challenged at this point to consider their own position. They may for instance think of themselves as poor and marginalised. But Jesus talks of Elijah going to a widow outside Judaism. The underlying point made in the scene is that these people cannot think this puts them into a privileged position. They cannot expect 'instant' miraculous action. Rather they should

accept the true role of Jesus and be prepared to wait for the saving action of God as this unfolds.

In his dialogue with the people of Nazareth, Jesus identifies with the situation of previous Old Testament prophets who also refused to be 'defined' by the people around them. He recalls Elijah the great prophet of Kings 1 and 2. One is reminded here of this key figure whose presence is threaded throughout both Luke's Gospel and the Acts of the Apostles. Elijah for instance is pictured at the Transfiguration (Mark 9:2-13) and in relation to Herod who worries that Elijah has returned through Jesus (Luke 9:18). Again in Acts, at the time of the Ascension, the disappearance of Elijah in a fiery chariot into heaven is recalled when Jesus ascends into Heaven in a similar way (Acts 1:9). At the first Pentecost when the Holy Spirit descends in the form of tongues of fire one is again reminded of the Theophany with Elijah.

The references to Elijah through the writings of Luke, witness to a major theme and concern that Luke and his community are dealing with. This is the theme of succession. What will happen after the ascension of Jesus and Luke's community is gradually taken over more and more by Gentiles? A large part of the Elijah story is also taken up the question of succession. In the case of Elijah it is about his succession by Elisha (1 Kings 19:16). Behind the text of both Luke's gospel and Acts, Luke is asking a similar question. Will these people who have never been part of the Jewish tradition be able to carry on the message of Jesus?

With the mention of Elijah in Luke Chapter 4, there appears to be a clarification that the Jews in Nazareth will not (in any case) be the "successors" of Jesus' mission. Rather, in the immediate context of the Nazareth story, 'succession' to his mission would be carried over to people in Capernaum (a fishing village) as that is where Jesus heads after Nazareth rejects him. In Chapter 4, Luke deliberately draws a contrast

between the people in Nazareth and the people in Capernaum. Those at Nazareth hear him with praise. But the people in Capernaum recognise his authority (Luke 4:32) Jesus tells the people that he grew up with, that what has happened at Capernaum will not be happening for them in Nazareth. Then he goes on to Capernaum, teaches in their synagogue and performs there the miracles he refused to perform in Nazareth. Soon, in Luke's Chapter 5, Jesus begins to single out those specific people who will be the successors to his mission. Capernaum provides a background setting for these people. It was in fact the town of Peter and Andrew, James and John and also Matthew.²²⁷ In one sense, in a Jewish sense, Capernaum was on 'the outer.' It was situated on the northern shore of the Sea of Galilee and it was near the highway of the Roman Empire.²²⁸ But here the authority of Jesus was accepted.

In terms of narrative, the rejection of Jesus from the Nazareth synagogue could be described as a "transformative action". After this Jesus was 'free' of his previous community. The "ousting" of Jesus from Nazareth could also be described as a "pivot" in the story because the people there turn on him so suddenly. Again it could also be described as a story kernel as described by Allan Powell.²²⁹ Why so? It has an essential, causal impact on the events that are to follow. Jesus leaves Nazareth and goes on to preach at the place where he will be recruiting his successors.

In the passage of Luke 4:16-30, Luke the writer, also clarifies the type of tension that will continue to be threaded through his gospel and Acts between Jesus and the people (mainly the Jews) who expect privilege. Such a tension will continue to be

²²⁷ BibleWalks.com "Capernaum"

<http://www.biblewalks.com/Sites/capernaum.html> [accessed 30 August 2013]

²²⁸ BibleWalks.com "Capernaum".

²²⁹ Mark Allan Powell, *What is Narrative Criticism?* (Minneapolis, MN: Fortress Press, 1990), 35-50.

a cause of action and conflict into future years with the mission of Paul, for example in the later debates about circumcision. Such debate almost split the church community. At the more general level, the mutual rejection at Nazareth shows that people cannot expect privilege. Rather they will be expected to both participate in the mission of Jesus and also be part of its succession.

In Luke 4:16-30 there is an ‘undercurrent’ theme of moving outwards. This fits with the gospel as a whole. Jesus is on a journey and the story here picks up on that. When he passes through the midst of the townspeople on the brow of the hill at Nazareth, there is a sense of direction in his movement and this refers to an on-going theme of moving towards Jerusalem. Such a sense of movement is continued on into the Acts of the Apostles as Paul heads towards Rome and the world at large. The implied reader is challenged here to identify with the movement, join in with it and carry it on themselves.

There is a parallel here with Matthew’s challenge thrown up at the end of his gospel to take the gospel and morality of Jesus to the world stage. Yet Luke goes one step further here. In fact he makes this the key goal that is implicitly and explicitly built into both of his books. Luke not only aims for the socio-economic world stage but the political world stage as well. The aim was to create a new type of society.

Luke Continuing on the Morality Themes of Paul

In the latter study an interpretation of narrative criticism (a synchronic method of interpretation) was used. In the preceding pages it was demonstrated, using Historical Critical Exegesis, how Paul isolated three key social commandments “thou shalt not kill, commit adultery, or steal” and wove them into his teaching without explicitly pointing out their connection to the commandments themselves.

One wonders to what extent and in what way, did Luke also pick up the thread of isolating out the three key commandments and then integrating these into the text of Jesus' teaching, again without explicitly mentioning them. One also wonders if Luke continues on the theme of the child in association with these commandments (as presented in Mark) and whether or not he puts his own "stamp" on how to develop observance of these commandments.

To answer a couple of the above questions. Like Matthew, Luke devotes the opening section of his gospel to a description of a child. In Luke's case this child fits in with the Gentile background of his auditor/readers.²³⁰ Some examples are as follows:

A One can also find that Luke does thread into his gospel veiled references to the three key commandments. As in Matthew, the "child" section at the start of the gospel shows the three temptations put to Jesus (Mt 4). The three temptations "echo" the three key commandments. How so? The devil tempts Jesus to multiply stones into bread for material benefit (c/f "Thou shalt not steal"). He tempts him to jump from the pinnacle of the Temple so God, the Father of Jesus would send angels to save him (c/f presumption about one's basic social group). The devil tempts Jesus to worship him in order to gain power over the kingdoms of the earth (cf. "Thou shalt not kill")

B Consider a further example of a veiled reference to the three key social commandments in the text. A man comes into the synagogue and he says "I thank you God that I am not grasping (cf. "Thou shalt not kill"), unjust (cf. "Thou shalt not steal") or adulterous (cf. Thou shalt not commit adultery") like the rest of mankind." (Luke 18:9-14)

²³⁰ Mark Allan Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* (New York/ Mahwah: Paulist Press, 1990),51.

C Another example again of a veiled reference is as follows: In Luke 9:51-62, the background story of Luke continues on as Jesus makes his way to Jerusalem. Against this background there are invitations made by Jesus to people to follow him. Responses to these show the readiness or otherwise of people to follow him. In Luke Chapter 9 three people come forward with an apparent readiness to do this. But they had reservations. The first says he will follow Jesus wherever he may go. But Jesus warns him “foxes have holes and the birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head.” In other words Jesus warns him such a following involves chosen poverty (a reversal of stealing). Another man was invited by Jesus to follow him. But the man replied “Let me go and bury my father first.” (that is, wait until his father dies). Jesus answered “Leave the dead to bury their dead; your duty is to go and spread the news of the kingdom of God.” There is a veiled reference here to the duty of obedience and one’s own self-determination, both of which are associated with “thou shalt not kill.” Jesus is asking the man to put his own self-determination (and will to power) aside. Then a third man said to Jesus “I will follow you sir, but first let me go and say good-bye to my people at home.” Jesus said to him. “Once the hand is laid on the plough, no one who looks back is fit for the kingdom of God.” There is a veiled reference here to say that a following of Jesus means putting this following above the priorities of family living, (cf. thou shalt not commit adultery).

If we pick up on these themes in terms of “money, power and sex”, (as expressed in the three key commandments) we find that the teaching of Jesus as Luke presents this not only puts priority on these commandments. It requires the “reversal” of all three key social commandments, changing these from negative prohibitions into a positive lifestyle which enables a follower with Jesus to be identified with him.

Luke's Acts of the Apostles develops this approach further and applies the same approach to the whole church. How so? A pivotal event in which this approach was extended to the whole church is narrated in Acts Chapter 15. In the interpretation of this chapter a narrative criticism of the text will be given as well as a historical critical exegesis. Both approaches fit fairly comfortably together even though narrative criticism is a synchronic method of interpretation while historical critical exegesis is a diachronic approach.

In order to put Acts 15 into its wider context consider an overview of what Luke wrote. He wrote two books for the one auditor/reader whom he called Theophilus (a Greek name). Theophilus was apparently a Gentile Christian community. The first book was his gospel which has been considered and is quoted here. The second book is known as "The Acts of the Apostles". This provides a history of the early life of the Church and its dilemmas. Up to about Chapter Fifteen of "the Acts" the story of the apostles are alluded to as continuing on in the background of the church's emergence. But after this chapter, focus in the story is put instead on Paul. Paul, we recall had not actually met Jesus Christ, but he claimed to be an apostle as well. This was because Jesus had appeared to him with the question "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?" (Acts 9:4). Paul (who was then called Saul) was on his way to Damascus to arrest Christians.

Paul considered himself to be an apostle to the Gentiles (Gal. 1:15-16). But there is an underlying question running through the gospels and especially in Matthew's gospel as to where the Gentiles stood with regard observance of the Jewish Law. In Chapter Fifteen of Acts, Luke provides an account of a Council at Jerusalem in which this question could be dealt with. Apparently at the Council this question is resolved once and for all (or so they thought). According to "Acts" Paul and Barnabas return after the Council to Antioch with the worked out 'solution' and they are (according to Luke's Acts) greeted

enthusiastically (Acts 15:31). Luke the narrator presents a very positive account of the Council and its aftermath.²³¹ But was the positivity exaggerated and if so why? Luke in Acts is dealing with a question of succession of membership and leadership in the emerging church. Gentile Christians are taking over the majority of the church membership and church leadership as well. Timothy for instance and as referred to in above pages, was a trusted supporter of Paul and even involved in the writing of his letters (2 Cor.1:1). But his father was a pagan (Acts 16:1). As regards Luke's account of the Jerusalem Council, a positive approach to its outcome would help to encourage the emerging leadership and provide stability.

However Paul's letter to the Galatians (which included Antioch) shows that the Council's "solution" or "transition" to Gentile dominance was not as smooth as Luke would have the reader believe. The discussion on Paul's letter to the Galatians in pages above above demonstrates this. Some of the above discussion points are raised here again and are discussed further below. In Acts 15, it is the apparent church leader James who puts forward the "solution" that the Council had been convened to sort out. Yet in Paul's letter to the Galatians it is apparently this same James who had sent messengers to Antioch who had deterred Peter and even Barnabas from continuing to eat with the Gentile Christians (Gal. 2:13). In Paul's view this separation was a contradiction of the Eucharistic Meal (cf. 1 Cor. 11:17-24). As well as the eating conflict going on in Galatia where Antioch was located, there were also people (whether from James or not) who wanted Gentile converts to be circumcised (Gal. 2.. Paul, now with an apparent loss of status in Antioch exclaims "Galatians have you gone mad?" (Gal 3:1)

²³¹ Ernst Kasemann, *Essays on New Testament Themes*, vol. 41 of *Studies in Biblical Theology*. Trans. W. J. Montague (London: SCM Press Ltd, 1964), 66.

Scholars still debate as to whether the Council of Jerusalem came before Paul's letter to the Galatians or after it.²³² But in any case there was a situation of contradiction between Acts 15 and the Galatian letter. One also wonders here if there was more implied in the resolution of the Council of Jerusalem than what all the parties involved in the Council actually realised. Acts 15 says everyone agreed to the resolution (Acts 15:25). But did all of them understand the implications of this? Even to this day there are differences in interpretation (to be discussed below) as to what was implied in the Council's ruling.

The narrative criticism of Acts 15 to follow here in the form of an exegesis, relies to a considerable extent on the methods of the historical critical exegesis approach. The exegesis will consider in particular the resolution of the Council and how it in fact picks up on and develops the thread of the three key social commandments which involve money, power and relationship.



²³² Cf. Charles M. Laymon, ed., *The Interpreter's One-Volume Commentary on the Bible* (Nashville, Tennessee: Abingdon Press, 1971. 748

Chapter Seven

An “Official Policy” in Luke Regarding ‘blood, fornication and strangling’

Exegesis of Acts 15:1-35 Using Narrative Criticism²³³

The section of Acts 15:1-35 deals with resolving a Jewish Christian conflict which is a central theme in this second book of Luke.²³⁴

In simple terms the Jews that had converted to Christianity, especially those of the Pharisee sect, thought that Gentile converts should be required to be circumcised. The verse of 15:1 describes how some people from Judea had gone to missionary areas such as Galatia to pressure Gentile converts into doing this. It appears they gave the impression they were authorised to do so, probably from the "Hebrew" section of the Church led by James (not one of the apostle brothers James and John). The recurring visit possibly from these people had triggered the trip made by Paul and Barnabas from the church in Antioch to Jerusalem and it led to their request that a Church Council be held to sort out the question of

²³³ Note: This exegesis is largely adapted from the same writer of this research project *Is Christian Morality Unique?* that is, Michelle Nailon *Is there a Critique of Greek Philosophy in the Gospels* (Melbourne: Project Employment, 2016) [www.gospelofmark.org, accessed Oct 2018]

²³⁴ Robert C. Tannehill, *The Narrative Unity of Luke-Acts: A Literary Interpretation, Vol 2 The Acts of the Apostles* (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, c1986-c1990), 28.

circumcision. This question also entailed observation of the many intricacies of Jewish law (15:2).

In 15:24 it was pointed out that the visitors trying to impose circumcision did not have permission from the church leadership to spread this message and this point was included in a letter from the Council that Paul and Barnabas took with them back to Antioch. The letter from the Council also included the decision that was reached by the Jerusalem Church leadership (15:23). However it also appears that the visitors to Antioch who wanted circumcision carried considerable status in the Church. This was evidenced in Paul's letter to the Galatians (c/f Gal. 2:6). Part of the outcome of their influence in Galatia was that their pressure had coerced Peter into refraining from eating with Gentile converts (Gal 2:11). On the one hand this separation may have fitted with a Jewish rule to refrain from eating with Gentiles, or eating their food or entering the houses of Gentiles. But it had serious implications for joint participation in the Agape-Eucharist of the community of the followers of Jesus. Paul pointed out that Peter was in a contradictory position here. In Acts 10:14, (before the Jerusalem Council), when Peter was more obviously the church leader as designated by Jesus, he recounted a vision when he was told "What God has cleansed you must not call common." So Peter's behaviour in Galatia showed a reversal and Paul confronted him about it (Gal 2:11).

The major point at issue in the Jerusalem Council was circumcision (15:1). This painful and even dangerous operation for adults was deterring Gentiles from joining the church. It also implied that people would be obliged to practice all the intricacies of Jewish law as well. A pro-circumcision lobby (whether from Jews or from Christian Jews) was also putting missionaries such as Paul into danger. For instance Paul had been dragged out of Antioch and left for dead after "Jews" (the major source of conflict in the narrative of Acts) had persuaded the crowds to stone him (Acts 14:19).

However despite this opposition, Paul continued to tell Gentile converts that circumcision was not necessary and salvation was to be found through faith or "the spirit of life in Christ Jesus" (Romans 8:1).

At the convened Jerusalem Council, Peter recounted how he had witnessed the Holy Spirit descend on Gentile converts in the same way that the Holy Spirit had filled the apostles at the time of Pentecost (Acts 15:8-9). In terms of the story, the participants at the Council should have been familiar with this event showing how God's Holy Spirit, was guiding and empowering the church. The point being made here was that the Holy Spirit came to uncircumcised Gentiles as well as Jews.²³⁵ Also the implication here was that one could not expect to somehow "coerce" salvation from God on the basis of observing circumcision and the myriad rituals and observances that went with it as pursued by many Pharisees.

Peter's experience of the Holy Spirit as recounted in Acts 15 reflected an emerging realisation in the Church that Pentecost marked a new beginning for the followers of Jesus, one that was dominated by the presence of the Holy Spirit. Jesus himself had heralded such a beginning on his return to his native Nazareth, even though the people there rejected him.

In terms of biblical scholarship, Peter's reference to the coming of the Holy Spirit and Pentecost has relevance to the differing views amongst scholars as to whether or not the early Church believed that an "end time" or parousia was imminent. According to Hans Conzelman, whose book *The Theology of St Luke* (1957) has had such influence, the early Church thought in terms of three time phases - that of the Old Testament, the time of Jesus and a time of waiting for his

²³⁵ Neal M. Flanagan, *New Testament Reading Guide: The Acts of the Apostles*, 2nd ed. (Collegeville, Minnesota: The Liturgical Press, 1964), 6.

return or parousia.²³⁶ Conzelman said at the time of Luke such a time of waiting was becoming more extended and there was need for the Church to clarify its policies and future direction. On the other hand, more recent scholars consider that there was an eschatology in the early church that incorporated the idea of Jesus coming in a spiritual sense, rather than the church needing to wait for an "end-time".²³⁷ Such an opinion appeared to be increasing (within the story in Acts) as the position of the church and its mission became ever more secure and more widespread. It was through the Holy Spirit that God was empowering the successors of Jesus to carry on his mission and bring the good news of the gospel to all "the nations" (Lk 24:47)

In this setting such a sense of the Spirit would have inspired confidence in church leaders to clarify and make decisions about their future direction as a whole church. The fact that Paul was self-confident enough in his own position to challenge Peter and the leadership in Jerusalem was an indication of this emerging confidence in the church as a whole. Luke's account of the Jerusalem Council also shows the outward movement that was being made towards the Gentiles. For instance mention of "the nations" (that is, the Gentiles) is repeatedly mentioned in the text c/f verses 15:3, 7, 12, 14, 17, 19 and 23.

In terms of interpreting Acts 15 using narrative criticism, it is helpful to keep in mind the observation made by the Catholic Pontifical Commission document of 1993.²³⁸ This describes the value of narrative criticism which is a "synchronic" approach to gospel interpretation. It says narrative criticism

²³⁶ Hans Conzelmann *The Theology of St Luke*, trans. Geoffrey Boswell (London: Faber and Faber, 1960), 40.

²³⁷ Mark Allan Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* (New York: Paulist Press, 1991), 59-60

²³⁸ Pontifical Biblical Commission, "The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church," 497-524

helps to complement the necessary "diachronic" approach of Historical Critical Exegesis.²³⁹ In its discussion of narrative criticism, the Commission points out the need to distinguish between the "writer" and the "narrator".²⁴⁰ Thus even while Luke the narrator was shaping the text to give an account of the Jewish Council, at a deeper level Luke the writer, was also organising the presentation of his theological ideas, which may or may not, have been explicitly mentioned in the story. Thus he could have embedded ideas into the story that are not explicitly mentioned or explained by the narrator.

Luke the narrator, was shaping his account of the Council to persuade his implied readers that the Council decision was both credible and inspired by the Holy Spirit. The speeches made at the Council were crafted into a rhetorical style similar to that described by Greek philosophers such as Aristotle.²⁴¹ Thus on the one hand the literary tools of Greco-Roman culture were being used even while Luke (through the speakers) was persuading a largely Jewish Christian audience to admit Gentile Christians into their company.

Prior to the presentation of Peter's speech and the Council's decision, Luke mentions the great joy that was given to people in Phoenicia and Samaria when Paul and Barnabas had told them of the "conversion of the nations." (15:3). This "good news" was repeated at the Council as well (15:12). In terms of the characterisation of the story, Paul and Barnabas were themselves adroit in relating the success of their mission to the Gentiles on their way to Jerusalem. Some of their listeners, who were also on their way to the Council, would thus be likely to spread this good news amongst other attendees before the Council itself got underway.

²³⁹ Pontifical Commission, "The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church," 502.

²⁴⁰ Pontifical Commission, "The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church," 503.

²⁴¹ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 97.

Scholars describe Luke's approach to his texts as an optimistic one.²⁴² This was discussed in the introductory section above when it was pointed out that he would want to give encouragement to the emerging Gentile Christian leaders. At the theological level as well there would also be an overall purpose in this optimism. Luke was stressing the glory and joy of God's on-going, planned action rather than the dimensions of Jesus' suffering. His tone of optimism also helps to keep a sense of momentum continuing on as the story of God's actions unfolds. It might be argued that Luke was failing here to present a theology of the cross. However as Joseph Fitzmyer points out, Luke's theology should be approached on its own terms rather than being compared with the theologies of Mark and Paul.²⁴³ In fact, according to Fitzmyer, Luke never gives any indication of having read the letters of Paul.²⁴⁴ Fitzmyer's claim can of course be disputed. The text of Acts implies that they knew each other. The "we" passages of the text of Acts (cf. 16:10), claim that Luke was a fellow missionary with Paul and he was a travelling companion on Paul's lengthy sea journey (Acts 27-8). Also at one point in his letters Paul claims "Luke alone is with me" (2 Timothy 4:11). But with regard to Fitzmyer's claim, apart from Paul's speeches in Acts (recounted by Luke), Luke's concepts do differ from Paul's as also from the other evangelists.²⁴⁵

Obviously, in writing, Luke had his own agenda, even while he was picking up on the ideas of other writers. His gospel for instance shows clear indication that he, like Matthew, relied heavily on Mark.²⁴⁶ What was Luke's "agenda"? Throughout the narrative of Luke-Acts there is a geographical movement towards Jerusalem in the gospel and then in Acts a similar sort

²⁴² Kasemann, *Essays on New Testament Themes*, 66.

²⁴³ Joseph Fitzmyer, intro, trans, notes *The Gospel According to Luke (I-Ix)* (New York: The Anchor Bible Doubleday, 1981), 22.

²⁴⁴ Fitzmyer, *The Gospel According to Luke*, 28.

²⁴⁵ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 110.

²⁴⁶ Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* 18.

of movement towards Rome. At another level there is also the sense that God, the main character, is pushing Jesus and then his successors ever forward and outwards in terms of a Divine "plan."²⁴⁷ Thus in the gospel Luke presents Jesus as the "hero". Then in Acts the successors of Jesus are also shown to be "heroes" who continue on with God's plan. Darrell Bock has drawn comparisons between the "action heroes" of Luke-Acts and the heroes of the Greek writer Homer, for example in Luke's use of verbs.²⁴⁸

In Acts 15:1-35 the sense of movement throughout the text is also evident here. In fact at times it appears to override some of the detail in a way that is more "sweeping" than one would find in Luke's gospel. His style of telescoping events and glossing over negative complexity may add to his 'looser' use of language in Acts.²⁴⁹ Paul and Barnabas for instance are at the Council, but they appear to have a passive role in the decision making. Then in Acts 21:25 it even appears that Paul was barely aware of the Council's outcome.²⁵⁰

This brings our discussion to the proceedings of the Council itself and any possible links here with the three key commandments which have been the focus of our overall investigation.

As mentioned, a close look at the text of Acts 15 raises questions about whether or not all of the people at the Council actually understood what was going on. This lack of awareness is arguably reflected in biblical commentaries to this day that describe the text relating to the Council as very "problematic"²⁵¹

²⁴⁷ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 39.

²⁴⁸ Darrell L. Bock, "The Son of Man in Luke 5:24," *Bulletin for Biblical Research* 1 (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1991), 109-121.

²⁴⁹ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 66.

²⁵⁰ Laymon, ed., *The Interpreter's One-Volume Commentary on the Bible*, 748

²⁵¹ Laymon, ed. *The Interpreter's One-Volume Commentary on the Bible*, 748.

On the one hand the text of Acts 15:5 says the Council controversy was fuelled by converted members of the Pharisee sect who said that Gentile converts should be circumcised and should be required to keep the law of Moses. The mention of Pharisees here is significant. Pharisees did not simply observe a rule of circumcision. Rather their whole lives were dominated by ritualistic rules that had been linked to the commandments. These rules were like an exterior cover for the ten major commandments of Moses (cf. Exodus 20: 13-15). But it also appears in the gospel that these people assumed by keeping the many detailed rules they would also be more likely to observe the commandments of Moses. This assumption led Jesus in the gospel of Mark to have confrontations with the Pharisees on this very issue. For instance he pointed out the failure of Pharisees to keep the essential commandment about honouring their parents. Rather they were putting their property into "Corban" (a form of dedication) and then saying because of this they did not have to support their parents (Mark 7:11). This is of course against the commandment "Honour thy father and thy mother" (which precedes the three commandments discussed above about "Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal" as recalled in Mark 10) In the context of his reprimand Luke 11:26 Jesus even said that the Pharisees' Gentile converts to Judaism were finishing up morally worse than they were before. Following this same line of logic that had been pointed out by Jesus in Luke 11, Peter, at the Council of Jerusalem, talked of the inability of both himself and those present to keep the details of "the law." Peter said it was therefore unfair to place such burdens on converts (15:10). His mention of this point shows that he, and presumably many of the people present, also realised that with circumcision, more was being imposed on the Gentile converts than just circumcision itself.

In the text of Chapter 15, after Peter's statement about the Holy Spirit (Acts 15:8), the meeting was taken over by another

leader called James. The emergence of James at this point gives some indication of the early church's structure and history. In fact some writers such as Kaseman claim that it was an early indication of the development of "catholicity" in the Church and a move away from the church's original, more flexible shape.²⁵²

In any case in the story Peter appeared to defer to this leadership of the elders and James, who was now apparently the elected leader.²⁵³ Paul in turn appeared to defer to the leadership of the church in Antioch, given that he was appointed by them to attend the Council. The Antiochene Church appeared in turn to defer to the "Mother Church" in Jerusalem. At least these implications about leadership show that decisions made at the Jerusalem Council showed a united, corporate direction.

On the other hand within the dynamics of the Jerusalem Council in Acts 15, the debate appeared to move from the question of circumcision towards the dietary rules that would have been affecting Gentile Christian participation in the agape-Eucharist. Special weight was given to James' view about this, not just because he was (apparently) Bishop of Jerusalem but also because traditionally, his credentials about law observance were above reproach.²⁵⁴

Some scholars such as Richard Pervo claim that Luke primarily wrote for entertainment and edification.²⁵⁵ But at depth there is more than "just a story" going on in Luke's account of the Council.²⁵⁶ Actually it is to the credit of Luke's

²⁵² Kasemann, *Essays on New Testament Themes*, 132-3.

²⁵³ Black, Rowley eds. *Peake's Commentary on the Bible*, 907.

²⁵⁴ James D. G. Dunn, John W. Rogerson, *Eerdmans Commentary on the Bible* (Grand Rapids, Michigan: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 2003), 1245.

²⁵⁵ Richard I. Pervo, *Profit with Delight: the literary genre of the Acts of the Apostles* (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, c1987), 138.

²⁵⁶ Flanagan, *New Testament Reading Guide: The Acts of the Apostles*, 6.

story-telling skills that someone could think he was mainly interested in story as such.

In any case there appears to be a contradiction in Luke's story of the Council. The chapter begins with the presentation of a heated debate about circumcision that threatens to split the church. But the solution offered in verse 20 does not appear to even touch on this subject! Rather it deals with four requirements that are parallel to those already required of Gentile aliens who are living in Palestine. These entail rules against the pollution of idols including eating meat sacrificed to idols (Lev. 17:8-9), sexual immorality including certain types of marriages (Lev. 18:1-30), eating strangled animals that is, those animals that have not been ritually slaughtered (Lev. 17:13), and also consuming animal blood (17:10-14).²⁵⁷ These appear to be summarised at the Council by telling Gentile converts they were to avoid "blood, fornication and strangling" (Acts 15:20).²⁵⁸ It appears this is what the church voted overwhelmingly for "it seemed good to us becoming of one mind" (v. 22) but this was something already set out in Jewish law. So what was the point of the Council?

James diplomatically puts forward the proposal that if Gentile converts avoid these things this would enable them to participate in meals with Jews, especially the Agape-Eucharist, without further cause of disruption in the overall church.²⁵⁹ According to the Council, its decree on this was to be carried by Paul and Barnabas to Antioch, and this (according to Luke) appears to resolve the question at issue (15:25).

²⁵⁷ Robert L. Wilken "The Bible and Its Interpreters: Christian Biblical Interpretation," in *Harper's Bible Commentary*, ed. James L. Mays et al (San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1988), 1099.

²⁵⁸ Note: The Jerusalem New Testament translates a phrase here as "the meat of strangled animals. But the RSV translates it more accurately as "what is strangled," This latter translation could thereby be understood metaphorically. .
" "

²⁵⁹ Black, H. H. Rowley eds. *Peake's Commentary on the Bible*, 907.

However, it appears that the circumcision question was not really resolved here at all. For instance in the 2nd Century, in Justin Martyr's *Letter to Trypho* the question is (again) raised²⁶⁰ Moreover, further along, in the narrative of Acts itself there is still tension about circumcision and full adherence to the Jewish law. For instance, in Acts 21 when Paul returned to Jerusalem he was greeted by James and the elders (v. 8). But now James tells Paul he is being challenged by "tens of thousands of believing Jews who were all zealots of the law." (v. 20). And here, even with the quote about huge numbers of opponents, Luke appears to be understating the sort of pressure that James and the elders were under.

Further complications about the effectiveness of the Jerusalem Council of Acts 15 also appear, when Luke's account of it is compared with Paul's apparent account of this Council in Galatians 2. Inconsistencies between the two accounts include the inference that after his conversion, Paul only went to Jerusalem twice. But Acts implies he went three times, that is, after his conversion (9:26), in relation to a famine (11:30) and then to the Council (15:2). More significantly, Paul does not mention the "edict" of the Council in the letter to the Galatians even though in Acts, Luke says he was entrusted to take this edict back to the missionary Churches and in particular to the church in Antioch which is in Galatia.

The failure of Paul to mention the Council edict in Galatians is magnified by the special emphasis that Luke gives to this event in the structure of Acts. The Council is placed in the centre of Luke's narrative. It is presented as a decisive turning point in the story and so it acts as a "story kernel."²⁶¹ Also, (as

²⁶⁰ Wilken "The Bible and Its Interpreters: Christian Biblical Interpretation," 58.

²⁶¹ Ian Chabay "Narratives in the context of Global Systems Science and ICT"
<http://ec.europa.eu/digital->

mentioned above) prior to the Council, the Jerusalem Church and the apostles are central to the action. But after the Council, the main actor is Paul and apart from 16:4 the apostles are no longer mentioned. Again, immediately after the Council Paul sets out on his second missionary journey which takes in places such as Asia Minor 15:36, Macedonia 16:11, Athens 17:16 and Corinth 18:1. Thus focus in the Lukan text of Acts has now moved to Paul's mission to the Gentiles.

Given Luke's ability to present accurate background details, one would expect that his account of the important Council to be historically accurate as well, even if, according to the style of the time he dramatised this.²⁶² According to Powell, Luke was using all three types of the genre of a Greek novel known at the time, that is, history, biography and the novel.²⁶³ Luke also shows flexibility in his ability to shape speeches to fit the viewpoints of the speaker. Thus the earlier speeches in Acts appear more primitive and they echo Semitisms (cf. a Jewish style). But in later speeches, for example at the Areopagus in Athens (17: 21-31), a classical Greek style is being used.²⁶⁴ Luke also shows sensitivity to people's viewpoints. Thus expressions peculiar to Paul are used in Paul's speeches even though these expressions are scarce in the rest of the text.²⁶⁵

All this being the case, one must wonder what dimensions are at work in the speech of James when he presents the Jerusalem Council with an "edict" that is supposed to resolve the

agenda/futurium/sites/futurium/files/Chabay%20Narratives%20in%20the%20Context.pdf 4th March 2013., [accessed 20 October 2013].

²⁶² Martin Hengel, *The 'Hellenization' of Judaea in the First Century after Christ*. In Collaboration with Christoph Marksches, Trans. John Bowden. (London: SCM Press Ltd, Philadelphia: Trinity Press International, 1989), 7.

²⁶³ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 9.

²⁶⁴ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 25.

²⁶⁵ Flanagan, *New Testament Reading Guide: The Acts of the Apostles*, 2nd ed., 5.

circumcision crisis but in fact only appears to be about dietary rules.

There appears to be at least two key omissions in the so-called "dietary rules" solution (cf. avoid blood, fornication and strangling). Firstly, it appears that Gentiles are being accepted into the church as if they themselves have little if anything to offer Christianity. Thus on the one hand the Jews have the tradition and strengths of the Mosaic Law. But the Gentiles only appear to have negative customs that need to be prohibited. This omission of what Gentiles can contribute appears to contradict the whole tenor of Luke's writing. His writing for a start was solidly based on the sophistications of Greek culture.²⁶⁶

Secondly it appears on the surface that James finds a solution to the present Church crisis by harking back to the book of Leviticus and elsewhere in the Old Testament. This may have carried weight with an audience of hostile Pharisee Christians. But the decision of James ("I have therefore decided..." Acts 15:19) is presented by Luke as being pivotal in the narrative and in the future direction of the whole church. Why then would there not be some reference to the teachings of Jesus himself?

These two "difficulties" plus other problems raised in Biblical commentaries could possibly be explained if there were a connection between the "dietary rules" and "the way" that Paul said he had been preaching. Here as well, there were problems in explanation. A (very) literal translation of Acts 19:23 has Paul saying "Now there was about time that trouble no little concerning the way".²⁶⁷ In fact Paul's first confrontation with "the way" was in his own misunderstanding of it. In Acts 9:2

²⁶⁶ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 24.

²⁶⁷ Alfred Marshall, trans., *The RSV Interlinear Greek-English New Testament* (Oxford: Marshall Pickering, 1988)

he was arresting both men and women that he had found to be following the "way".

To pick up on the two points raised above. What would Gentiles have to offer the church that would enable them to make their own response to and interpretation of the law of Moses? The whole of Hellenistic culture of course, cannot be summed up in a few words. But a quick overview would accept that Hellenism was (and is) largely based on rationalism and abstract concepts. Plato's *Republic* for instance was about an idealised society, which was in fact impossible to actually put into practice. But it presented ideals that could be pursued. Thus in terms of the commandments, rather than taking the minimalist approach of 'thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not commit adultery or thou shalt not steal', these could be interpreted in an "idealistic" fashion. People could push beyond the boundaries of the "thou shalt not kill" and towards the avoidance of cruelty as such. They could nurture respect for the prime social supports of themselves and others rather than 'just' avoid adultery. They could avoid unjust business practices rather than 'just' avoid stealing. They could push even further with such an 'idealistic' interpretation of the commandments. Thus they could move beyond a tribal social structure outwards - towards the universal provision of health care, social security for all and the production and provision of material goods for all. An argument could be developed to show that in the many associations of the Greco-roman Empire it was already doing this sort of thing to some extent and, it provided a framework for a positive approach to the commandments. Arguably present day industry structures are also based on such "ideals."

The question arises. Does this sort of development into a positive approach to the commandments come from the teaching of Jesus? A discussion of this has already been provided above. To recap. The gospel of Mark records a man asking Jesus "What must I do to inherit eternal life?" (Mark

10:17). Jesus replies, "You know the commandments; Do not kill, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not bear false witness, do not defraud, honour your mother and father." (Mark 10:19) The man replies that he has observed these commandments since his youth. Jesus then challenges him to "Go sell what you have, give to the poor and you will have treasure in heaven and come follow me." (Mark 10:21) In simple terms the challenge here is to go beyond "do not kill, commit adultery or steal." The same sort of "raising of the bar" of these three key commandments is found in Matthew 5:21-42 and allegorically in Luke when he resists the temptations of devil in 4:1-12. As noted above the devil tempts him to produce material goods v.4 (c/f thou shalt not steal), assume power over others v. 6 (c/f thou shalt not kill) and assume the support of his 'social' group v. 11 (c/f thou shalt not commit adultery). But in the context of these temptations Jesus asserts that there is more to found in life than material wealth, power and social adulation.

With such a positive focus on the key social commandments which have been the focus of our investigations, there would not be the need for the observance of ritualistic details to "protect" the commandments.

While the challenge of Jesus to "raise the bar" of the three key social commandments is threaded through the three synoptic gospels, such a presentation of the law would not have been easy in the environment of Jewish Christians. At the time, most of Paul's problems were caused by Jews, (and arguably) Christian Jews who identified themselves as being Jews. In Acts Paul had said he had problems teaching "the way". Such problems are apparent when he was trying to explain his position before Governor Felix in Acts 24:14. Paul told the Governor he was been trying to live according to "the way" even while his accusers claim he has been a founder of the 'Nazarine sect' (24:14). Paul did not agree with this.

In terms of "the way," which is possibly a key to understanding the edict of Acts 15:20, there are instances in Acts when a full commitment is being made by people along the same lines of the challenge by Jesus to the apparently young man in Mark 10:20. When Paul eventually returned to Jerusalem and James tells him of the hostility "tens of thousands" of Jewish converts all "zealous for the law" this implied that the tension in Jerusalem about law observance was ready to erupt (c/f 21:20). James therefore asked Paul to participate in a Temple ceremony in which some Christians were taking a "vow" (v. 24) in the hope that this would provide an opportunity for Paul to show his respect for the law. But before the ceremony, Paul was seen with a Gentile friend in the street (v. 29). So attendees at the Temple ceremony then claimed that he took this Gentiles into the restricted area of the Temple (v. 28). A riot erupted and the Romans had to take Paul into protective custody (v. 30-32). Later, Paul's nephew found out (apparently from within these same "Christian" circles) that forty plus people had taken a vow not to eat or drink until they had killed Paul (23:16). An implied reader of Acts could wonder here if the vow being taken by these people was some sort of "parody" of the vow that had already been taken by four people earlier on in the Temple. One could also wonder if the story is also a indication in the text of the deep hostility that was taken by some Christian Jews towards the "way" of observing the commandments that was being taught by Paul. Luke says it was Asian Jews in the temple who had triggered the riot 21:27. But there were many people who were quickly ready to support them and one wonders to what extent Christian Jews were amongst these protestors – some of the people James had warned Paul about. .

All these surrounding factors in the story of Acts, leads to an exploration of the layers of meaning to be found in the "edict" presented by James to the Jerusalem Council (15;20). On the surface it dealt with some dietary regulations, already set out in the Old Testament. A quick read of this suggests that

observance of these rules would help to smooth the entrance of Gentile converts into the Agape-Eucharistic meal.

But at the same time the edict could have carried a double meaning which encompassed a whole approach to the law based on "the way" as taught by Paul and which was both inspired by and suited to, a Gentile view of the law. It is interesting to note that in the story, when James asks Paul to attend a Temple ceremony in which a vow is taken, James again referred to the edict of the Jerusalem Council (21:25).

Thus all will know that there is nothing in what they have been told about you but that you yourself live in observance of the law. But as for the Gentiles who have believed, we have sent a letter with our judgment that they should abstain from what has been sacrificed to idols and from blood and from what is strangled and from unchastity.

((Acts 21:24b-25))

On the one hand it appears from this that Paul still observes the letter(s) of the Jewish law while the Gentiles only have to abstain from meat that has been sacrificed to idols or which contains blood because the animal had been strangled and from Temple prostitution. However (yet again) recall what Peter had said at the Council about "putting a yoke upon the neck of the disciples which neither our fathers nor we have been able to bear" (Acts 15:10). Given the situation of mounting tension James may have been exaggerating the extent of Paul's continued observance of the details of the Jewish law. However Paul had – up to his conversion, been a meticulous observer of the law. And, at any rate he certainly knew from his upbringing and earlier life about observance of the details of the law.

This brings us back to the question. Was there a double meaning in the edict of the Jerusalem Council as described in Acts 15? If so what was it? In looking for parallels, one could work out that when James mentions "blood" it could imply

cruelty of all kinds, including of course the blood sports which were so popular in Greco-Roman culture. Thousands of people for instance would attend gladiator fights to the death in local amphitheatres. When James mentions "fornication" he is talking about uncommitted sex as such rather than 'only' adultery with another married person. When he talks of "strangling" he could be picking up on the preaching of Amos whom he quoted at the Council cf. "I will rebuild the tent of David" (Acts 15:16). This comes from Amos 9:11. It was Amos who most loudly railed against unjust business practices

They sell the righteous for silver and the needy for a pair of shoes. They that trample the head of the poor into the dust of the earth and turn aside the way of the afflicted" etc
(Amos 2:6).

This fits in with James' prohibition against "strangling". Why else would he be quoting Amos in support of the rationale of his proposal and before putting this to the Council?

Such an interpretation of Acts 15:20 (about blood, fornication and strangling) would solve many of the difficulties that have been raised by biblical commentators on this text. It would combine the circumcision question with a dietary one and thus deal with the prime purpose of the Council which was about circumcision. It would help to explain why "fornication" was mentioned in this context. It would also tie in with Paul's preaching about "the way" in which he had been teaching observance of the law. It would also help to explain Paul's silence in the Council about this edict. He would not want to elaborate on and draw attention to a secondary meaning of what James was saying given that some people at least at the Council were likely to oppose it. On the other hand it is understandable that the church people at Antioch who included people of Gentile origin were more likely to realise there was a secondary meaning in the edict and they rejoiced about it

(15:31). Another reason why Luke did not discuss Paul's understanding of the edict was that Paul himself was developing his own distinct theology in support of "the way"

Some commentaries such as Peake claim that there could not be a link between dietary regulations of the Jerusalem Council and morality. It says "a simple moral law would not have been transformed into a dietary law."²⁶⁸

However it should be noted that an alternative ancient text for Acts 15, that is, the Western text, as distinct from the probably older Alexandrian text, does make a connection between verse 20 and a moral meaning. Ernst Haenchen says that the Western text is about ten per cent longer than the Alexandrian text and he provides explanations for this. It also appears the Western text has a harsher view of Judaism and it emphasises 'Gentile' aspects and Christian differences from Judaism such as theology of the Holy Spirit.²⁶⁹ In Acts 15:20 the Western text omits reference to "things strangled" and it replaces the phrase with a decree to "refrain from doing to another what you would not want done to you." This phrase gives a moral slant to the other aspects of the decree as well, that is, the worship of idols and the shedding of blood. As Martin Powell points out, "Thus the Western text presents the four restrictions placed on Gentile Christians in a way that **avoids** any reference to Jewish dietary laws."²⁷⁰

It may be an unfortunate omission that in most Bibles and therefore commentaries, the version of the Western text for verse 20 is overlooked.

The Western text may appear to be later. However some parts of it do date back to the second century. Also it was cited by

²⁶⁸ Black, H. H. Rowley eds. *Peake's Commentary on the Bible*, 909.

²⁶⁹ Ernst Haenchen *The Acts of the Apostles: A Commentary* (Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1971), Intro.

²⁷⁰ Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* 23.

many of the church writers in the West, for example, Irenaeus, Tertullian and Cyprian.²⁷¹ Even if the Western text entailed the re-writing of an earlier text this re-writing was a form of interpretation. The people writing the text were “implied readers” living soon after Acts was written and they were still aware of its historical situation. This was a time when there was an emphasis on interpretation taking into account the whole of Scripture as stressed by Irenaeus. Irenaeus was trying to re-claim the Scriptures for Christianity in opposition to the heresy of the Gnostics. This time was before the use of commentaries, as introduced by Origen in the third century.²⁷² Thus in re-writing an earlier text, the Western text writers could be taking into account the earlier challenge (about raising the bar of the commandments) put out by Jesus and repeated in Matthew and Luke.

In conclusion, an exegesis of Acts 15 shows the extent to which Luke as author was able to provide a narrative that both taught his theology and also presented the complexities that the Church faced in trying to set up a new social system. This social system was not only based on Judaism. It also incorporated the idealism of Greek culture as well. Such idealism was to be seen in its interpretation of the three key social commandments – “Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal.”

Conclusion about Paul and Luke

In an overall conclusion, we have seen how Paul (in the 50’s CE) isolated the three key social commandments and gave them an eschatological dimension. Insofar as one cultivated their spirit the Holy Spirit in turn was able to “grow” a spiritual body within the Temple of one’s body and this would share in the resurrected life of Christ. We also saw how, in

²⁷¹ Flanagan, *New Testament Reading Guide*, 6.

²⁷² Wilken “The Bible and Its Interpreters: Christian Biblical Interpretation,” 58-9.

about 70 CE at the height of the destruction of Jerusalem and the whole sacrificial system of the Temple, Mark the first gospel writer put out a challenge, as spoken by Jesus, to “sacrifice” one’s rights to possessions, family and self-determination in a following of him (cf. Mark 10) In Matthew, again with a focus on these three commandments, the followers of Jesus were challenged to “convert” the attitude with which they obeyed the law and put an emphasis instead on the spirit with which the commandments were observed (cf. Mt.5).

In Luke there was a linkage made between following the spirit of each of the commandments and a following of Jesus. The following of Jesus was to take precedence over concerns about material possession, the comforts of home living and self-determination.

Then in Acts the early Church met in a Council of Jerusalem to clarify its position in relation to the law and the commandments that the intricacies of Jewish law were designed to protect. Acts said the Jewish Council was convened to deal with the issue of circumcision. But instead it came up with a “solution” which appeared to repeat requirements as set out in Leviticus and relating to Gentiles who were living in a Jewish community. This apparent “solution” was unanimously accepted by those present at the Council. To this day it is still apparently accepted as the correct interpretation of this text by many biblical commentaries.²⁷³ The “snag” here about such an interpretation, whether now or in the time of Luke, has been that the circumcision question still appeared to linger on in places such as Antioch (cf. Gal. 3:1). A dietary solution also failed to recognise the contribution that Gentiles could make to the community at a moral level. Rather the “dietary interpretation” has implied that these uncircumcised people

²⁷³ Cf. Black, H. H. Rowley eds. *Peake’s Commentary on the Bible*, 909.

remained “outsiders” to the Christian Jews. Also, the text of Acts repeats the outcome of the Council at least three times in the text (cf. 15:20, 15:29, 21:25) in order to apparently stress that there was a real breakthrough with regard to obedience to the law. This resolution would be required of all Christians (cf. Acts: 15:20, 29, 16:4). But if the “solution” only referred to dietary laws it could be argued that Jewish Christians already avoided the consumption of blood and the meat of strangled animals. They already avoided the fornication rituals of pagan temples. So what if anything was in the “solution” for them. Did it even apply to them?

In the exegesis above and in the context of the three social commandments being continually threaded into the text of Paul, Mark, Matthew and Luke, it fits that all Christians, not just Gentile Christians, were urged to avoid “blood” as such, that is, cruelty to any sentient being. All Christians were urged to avoid not just adultery but fornication, that is, uncommitted sex. Indeed as Matthew had pointed out they were all urged to “upgrade” their attitude towards sexuality as such into respect for other persons. Also, by recalling the prophet Amos at the Council and his railing against “selling their sandals “ etc. (Amos 2:6), the meaning of the word “strangling” in the “solution” was extended to fair dealing in business practices. Again this requirement would apply to all Christians whether they be of Gentile or Jewish background.

The interesting thing about the threefold “solution” of the Council was that it telescoped the teachings about law from Paul and the gospel writers and others who had preceded Luke. True the Jeruslaem Council would have been convened in the 50’s CE. when Paul was still writing.²⁷⁴ But most scholars claim Luke was writing in the 80’s CE.²⁷⁵ This meant there had been thirty years for the Church to clarify the meaning of

²⁷⁴ Holladay, *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament*, (382-3).

²⁷⁵ Mark Allan Powell, *What Are They Saying About Acts?* (New York: Paulist Press, 1991), 37.

what had been resolved between the time of the Council and the writing of Acts.

From the time of Jesus there had been a distinctive change in the way that the followers of Jesus would observe the Commandments. Centuries later this distinct “way” of obeying the commandments has become incorporated into Western Culture and the implications of the edict remains. For instance in the writings of Shakespeare, the difference between a Jewish and a Christian interpretation of the commandments was highlighted in the *Merchant of Venice*. Shylock the Jew was ready to take his “pound of flesh” from Antonio. But then he was warned if he made the slightest of deviations from the exact weight his own fate would be the same. Again the spirit of the law takes precedence over its letter.

In the Council of Jerusalem there was a shift from material observance of the letter of the law, to a practice of its spirit. This shift was obligatory for all those people who claimed to be followers of Jesus, whatever their background. It was not an option.



Chapter Eight

The Passion in the Synoptics Gospels and the Three Key Social Commandments

The following chapter consists of three main sections, each devoted to an exegesis of the passion narrative in the gospels of Mark, Matthew and Luke. Each of these sections will demonstrate how Jesus willingly embraced the harsh reality of destitution (cf. “thou shalt not steal”), the harsh reality of aloneness (cf. “thou shalt not commit adultery”) and the harsh reality of powerlessness (cf. “thou shalt not kill”).

These three narratives of the passion are designed to counter the fears that prompt people to steal, commit adultery or kill. In his passion Jesus deliberately moves towards the very depths of each condition. Whatever the sufferings of his followers, whether they be poor, lonely or powerless, Jesus has been there before them. Whether people be tempted to steal, disrupt the stability of their own or other families or oppress other people, they are challenged by the passion narratives to embrace their situation instead, and to follow Jesus first of all.

In order to consider the passion narratives in the context of a whole gospel it is proposed to extend use of the method of historical critical exegesis, with narrative criticism and socio-rhetorical criticism.

Firstly, a further note on the latter two methods of interpretation. Narrative criticism was described by David

Rhoads in the 1970's.²⁷⁶ It treats the Scriptural text in a similar way to any other literature. It considers the range of literary narrative methods including the use of “kernals” (pivot points of a story) a “sandwich” construction (that is, a story within a story) and the position of an implied reader and the narrator (even as distinct from the writer). Like socio-rhetorical criticism, narrative criticism is described as a “synchronic” method of interpretation by the Catholic Pontifical Commission of 1993.²⁷⁷ At the same time like socio-rhetorical criticism, this method also retains close links with the diachronic historical critical exegesis. For instance a narrative critic falls back on historical critical exegesis when considering details of the narrative.

The method of socio-rhetorical criticism is considered to be an extension of historical, critical exegesis.²⁷⁸ The method has been demonstrated in particular by the writer Vernon Robbins.²⁷⁹ Socio-rhetorical criticism has a focus on tensions within a gospel writer's community which impel him to take a particular slant in writing, in order to persuade his community of his particular insight and interpretation. Such a background intention is likely to have been aimed at helping his community cope with particular difficulties in their own historical situation. Also, socio-rhetorical criticism uncovers how at times Hellenistic literary structures and/or traditions of the time are used by the writer.²⁸⁰ Socio-rhetorical criticism has been described as “synchronic” because the “rhetoric” of a

²⁷⁶ David Rhoads, Joanna Dewey and Donald Michie, *Mark as Story: An Introduction to the Narrative of a Gospel*, 2nd ed. (Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1982).

²⁷⁷ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 503.

²⁷⁸ Cf. Mack, Burton L. and Vernon K. Robbins, editors. *Patterns of Persuasion in the Gospels*. Sonoma, California: Pleridge Press, 1989. 197.

²⁷⁹ Vernon K. Robbins, *Jesus the Teacher: A Socio-Rhetorical Interpretation of Mark*. Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1984.

²⁸⁰ Vernon K. Robbins, *The Tapestry of Early Christian discourse: Rhetoric, society and ideology* (London: Routledge, 1996).

writer is likely to extend over the whole of a text such as a gospel.²⁸¹

Narrative criticism and socio-rhetorical criticism appear to fit in with and complement historical critical exegesis. But not all synchronic methods of interpretation have such a “fit”. Structural or “semiotic analysis” which was also endorsed by the Catholic Pontifical Commission of 1993 does not appear to have the same level of credibility. At this stage in this research project it will be avoided. However it will be dealt with at length in Part Two of this overall exploration of the question “Is Christian Morality Unique?”.

At this point there is to be a focus on the more credible methods of interpretation and the themes that these reveal in the passion narratives. At the same time it will be shown that these methods of interpretation raise questions about the beliefs of the gospel writers. However they do not appear to answer these questions adequately. It is therefore proposed in Part II to show how semiotic analysis does provide some answers here.

In the present section, questions to be raised include the following. On the one hand Mark’s passion narrative talks about the coming of the Kingdom of God. But Jesus is faced with a situation of total devastation and fear. Matthew’s passion narrative explores the trust that Jesus has had in God and in his disciples. But here Jesus is totally alone and deserted. In fact people jeer at his trust in others. Luke’s passion narrative faces an underlying question as to whether or not Gentile Christians can take over leadership of the church. But Luke’s passion narrative presents Jesus as so powerless.

²⁸¹ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” 502.

Some scholars claim that the passion narratives pick up on and clarify key themes in the gospels.²⁸² In fact, in the passion narratives Jesus plumbs the depths of the conditions of devastation, aloneness and powerlessness. Moreover even while dealing with these conditions suffered by Jesus, each writer is reflecting on the dilemma that his own community is facing. In 70 CE at the time scholars consider Mark's gospel to be written, Mark's community was facing the total destruction of Jerusalem and its whole Temple system. At that time many of the followers of Jesus identified themselves as Jews. They therefore shared in the dismay and fear felt by Jews worldwide in the Jewish diaspora. About fifteen years later, in 85 CE. when scholars consider Matthew's gospel was written, Matthew's community was facing a different situation. They were being ostracised from the local Synagogue. Suddenly they were alone. Did they or could they find an identity distinct from Pharisaic Judaism? Luke's community on the other hand, but around the same time, was facing a future with a minimal membership of Jewish Christians. Could this community continue on as the followers of Jesus even while they made an outreach to the whole world?

a. The Gospel of Mark and the Passion Narrative

The biblical scholar Donald Senior points out that the key approach and intention of the gospel writers can be found in the way that they relate the story of the Passion.²⁸³ Senior points out that in general, over the four gospels, there is a

²⁸² Cf. Donald Senior, *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Luke* (Wilmington, Delaware: Glazier, 1989), 116

²⁸³ Donald Senior, *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Mark*, (Wilmington, Del.: Michael Glazier, c1985), 7.

uniformity in the story of the passion that is not so evident elsewhere. This suggests that an effort is being made by the writers (that is, narrators) to keep a unity in the approach taken here. Thus any deviation from Mark on the part of either Matthew or Luke, demonstrates a particular interest in presenting a particular angle of both the passion and their gospel as a whole.²⁸⁴

Matthew and Luke based their narratives on Mark. Thus Matthew 29:33-56 and Luke 23:33-49 begin like Mark 15:22-41. There is the journey of Jesus towards the place of crucifixion, that is, “the rock of the skull”. The three accounts of the Passion end after the death of Jesus and mention of women in the distance who are watching what has happened.

By way of introduction it is appropriate to reflect to some extent on the gospel of Mark as a whole as also (again) on the methods of interpretation being used in such reflection. Recall that as Senior said, the passion narrative is likely to “sum up” the central themes of the whole gospel.

Historical critical exegesis, with its heavy focus on history and language shows that the text of Mark has a more “basic” type of Greek wording than the other gospels. This in itself suggests an earlier date than other gospels and it appears to have been written by someone more familiar with another language besides Greek, probably Aramaic.²⁸⁵ Historical critical exegesis also highlights the constant references to fear amongst the followers of Jesus. In fact scholars consider the gospel ends on this same note of fear as in Mark 16:8, rather than continuing on with Mark 16:9-20.²⁸⁶ This is because the last section of the gospel appears to have been added later and

²⁸⁴ Senior, *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Mark*, 7.

²⁸⁵ Byrne, *A Costly Freedom*, 11.

²⁸⁶ Cf. *The RSV Interlinear Greek-English New Testament* (Baskingstoke Hants: Marshall Pickering 1968) 217.

appears to be a synthesis of the endings of other gospels.²⁸⁷ The method also draws attention to the constant reference to failure in Mark on the part of the disciples. This includes both failure to understand both the identity of Jesus and also the nature of his message about the Kingdom that he proclaims. There is also the sense of betrayal in the text especially by Judas as related in Mark 14:10-11.

These sorts of observations lead scholars who use historical criticism to date the gospel at a time when people were still stinging from the time of Christian persecution in Rome by Nero in the 60's CE.²⁸⁸ At that time, especially in Rome, people were approached and pressured to betray their whole family and friends who were followers of Jesus. These people were then subjected to a horrible kind of death. It was unlikely that the writer of Mark's gospel was in Jerusalem and then survived when it was destroyed by the Roman army in 70 CE. It has therefore been suggested by some scholars that the place for writing the gospel was in Rome.²⁸⁹ At the same time Mark 13 shows that the writer was familiar with the way Jerusalem was destroyed and the sufferings of the people there. Suffering and deprivation is a major theme in Mark's gospel.²⁹⁰

However, within the overall text of Mark, historical critical exegesis does not necessarily deal with all the questions that it raises. For instance why did Jesus constantly try to silence people who were realising his identity (Mk 8:30). And yet why was he frustrated when they failed to do so (Mk 10:43). Why did the writer appear to have such a poor sense of the geography of Palestine?²⁹¹ Even if the writer did not live

²⁸⁷ Michael F. Trainor *The Quest for Home: The Household in Mark's Community* (Collegeville, Minnesota: The Liturgical Press, 2001), 173.

²⁸⁸ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist*, 24.

²⁸⁹ "The Gospel of Mark" *Study resources, Intro to the bible* (Blue Letter Bible) <https://www.blueletterbible.org/study/intros/mark.cfm> [accessed 24 Oct 2018].

²⁹⁰ Byrne, *A Costly Freedom*, xvi.

²⁹¹ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist*, 24.

there somebody else could have pointed out the geographical discrepancies in the text. What about interconnections between the theology of Paul (writing in the 50's CE) and the gospel, written about fifteen years later in 70 CE? Mark's gospel was written about fifteen years after Paul's emphasis on the need to accept Hellenistic thinking and membership. These are key themes in Paul's letters which would have been copied and circulated amongst followers of Jesus in general. Paul himself was mainly writing for auditor/readers who were converted Gentiles (c/f Corinthians). Mark, writing later on, must have realised that overall, Gentiles converts were starting to outnumber or had outnumbered Jewish converts. To what extent is there a connection here with the growing "kingdom" of the Church and the mockery faced by Jesus when the chief priests and scribes at his passion mocked its existence (Mk 15:31-32)? Recall that in 70 CE the chief priests and the whole temple system were in the process of being wiped out entirely.

As distinct from historical critical exegesis, consider some of the insights that narrative criticism provides for Mark's gospel and his passion narrative. The scholar Alter for instance points out that repetition is "ubiquitous" in narrative literature.²⁹² But historical criticism does not necessarily pick up on the significance of such repetitions. For that matter narrative criticism may not show up the full significance of these repetitions either, but it does do this in some ways, for example when a point is being emphasised.

A narrative criticism interpretation of Mark shows the identity of Jesus as "the Christ" (Mk 1:1). This is stated at the start of the gospel by a narrator who appears to be omniscient. The writer Brendan Byrne picks up on this sort of introduction and observes "There is the sense of the Gentile rather than the

²⁹² Alter, Robert, *The Art of Biblical Narrative* (New York: Basic books, c. 2001) 92.

Jewish world as the primary focus of mission.”²⁹³ The starting point of the gospel (Mk 1:1) asserts that Jesus is “the Christ”. In terms of narrative this informs the implied reader of the gospel about the identity of Jesus. Such knowledge now sits with the implied reader throughout the story to follow. Therefore, because of what they already “know” the implied reader is able constantly to watch the failure of the disciples of Jesus to realise who Jesus was (and is). From this narrative critic perspective the implied reader can also see how the Gentiles appear to be more responsive to the message of Jesus than the disciples are themselves (cf. Mk 7:25-30). It is as if there is something in the message of Jesus that appeals to the searching of Gentile people while the disciples, raised within Judaism, cannot appreciate this.

In the first half of the gospel there is a crescendo of activity in the overall narrative that leads to the point when Peter states “Thou art the Christ.” (Mk 8:29) Francis Moloney claims this is a peak in the narrative of the text. After this point there is a falling off in the miracle working of Jesus. It is as if the earlier miracles had been reinforcements about the identity of Jesus and after the definitive statement “Thou art the Christ” the miracles are no longer so necessary.²⁹⁴

Narrative critics also note the story-telling skills of Mark such as his use of a sandwich method which breaks into a story with another incident. The use of a “sandwich” construction reinforces a message about the story that is interrupted and then continued. The passion narrative itself begins with the betrayal by Judas. This is interrupted by a woman who bursts into the meal scene and anoints the head of Jesus. Her interruption both contrasts with and appears to trigger the final decision made by Judas to betray Jesus (Mk 14:10-11).²⁹⁵

²⁹³ Byrne, *A Costly Freedom*, xviii.

²⁹⁴ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist*, 48.

²⁹⁵ Byrne, *A Costly Freedom*, 216.

Such a betrayal would have been a familiar experience amongst those followers of Jesus who knew how whole families had been betrayed by fearful members. Mark's community members were still afraid of betrayal and could identify with Jesus in this situation. But we are left to wonder about the background story here as to why exactly it was this interruption by the woman that became the trigger point for Judas' betrayal.

In the analysis made by Moloney of this anointing scene, he does not see a connection here with a symbolic Kingly anointing of the head (c/f the anointing of King David). However as with other narrative critics, he points out that there connection here with a constant theme in the gospel about the coming of the Kingdom.²⁹⁶ We still wonder however about the full significance of this.

In contrast to the overall story line about the coming of God's kingdom, the crucifixion presents a stark picture of total desolation. Such a contrast between "Kingdom" and desolation as set up by the writer must be deliberate. Thus on the one hand the story-line may be about the coming of the Kingdom.²⁹⁷ But the crucifixion narrative appears to demonstrate that it did not come after all. Not even news of the resurrection changes this situation. The women who were told by the angel to take the message of the resurrection back to the disciples, go away instead, in fear. In a word, the gospel for the narrative critic, appears to end in failure (Mark 16:8).²⁹⁸

Mark's narrative shows a step-by-step move towards this utter devastation. If one starts looking at the narrative, at the point where Judas betrays Jesus behind his back, the next step in the story is the disciples preparing for the Passover meal and Judas attending this meal. At the time Jesus is well aware of what

²⁹⁶ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist* 176.

²⁹⁷ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist* 176.

²⁹⁸ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist* 52.

Judas has done. There is a reference to the betrayal in what he says “one of you will betray me” (Mk 14:18) Jesus and the disciples then go to a garden where Jesus asks for the companionship and support of the group. But they fall asleep “And he came and found them sleeping” (v. 37). Then Judas arrives and signals to an armed crowd as to which person they should seize. His signal is to give Jesus a kiss “The one I shall kiss is the man, seize him” (v. 44). Then all the supporters of Jesus fled. Jesus is then questioned and insulted at a “kangaroo court” held by the Jews. He is taken to Pilate where the crowd call out “Crucify him” (15:13). Pilate orders that he be scourged and crucified. But before taking him out of Jerusalem the soldiers play games with him. They put a crown of thorns on him and mock the status of his Kingship (Mk 15:16-20) By the time Jesus was on his way to the crucifixion he was so weakened he could barely carry his cross and someone was forced to help him. Then, even when he was on the cross and stripped naked, people complained about his “mock” title of King. The chief priests, scribes and even passers by jeered at him.

And those who passed by derided him, wagging their heads and saying, “Aha! You who would destroy the temple and build it in three days, save yourself, and come down from the cross!” So also the chief priests mocked him to one another with the scribes saying, ‘He saved others; he cannot save himself. Let the Christ, the King of Israel, come down now from the cross, that we may see and believe.

(Mk 15:29-32).

The whole narrative of the passion in Mark shows a step by step “stripping away” of every kind of material support. The picture of Jesus on the cross presents the total opposite of kingship. As recalled above, even when women at the tomb were told to tell of his resurrection they went away instead in a state of fear. The narrative apparently provides a step by step descent into total failure. But even here, Mark the writer, as

distinct from Mark the narrator shows a glimpse of ironic hope. As mentioned above, the chief priests and scribes ridiculed Jesus about his “Kingdom”. But they themselves in 70 CE, along with the whole Temple system of worship were in the process of being destroyed themselves.²⁹⁹

One could wonder if other methods of interpretation could help to provide an answer to the ending of the gospel in apparent failure, yet with Mark’s touch of ironic ridicule. The socio rhetorical method of interpretation may hold a key to this enigma. It may help to clarify what Mark actually meant by the “Kingdom”.

In order to consider the insights of socio rhetorical interpretation into the passion narrative there is need to make a quick digression and take an in-depth and overall look at 1st century Palestine. This includes an examination of the impact of Hellenistic culture and their literary methods both on the situation of Jesus and the situation of the gospel writer.³⁰⁰ For instance a socio-rhetorical interpretation, as it appears to have been conducted by the scholar K.C.Hanson, takes a much closer look at the fishing industry around the Sea of Galilee than traditional interpretations. This has already been discussed to some extent in pages above³⁰¹

Hanson considers how Capernaum, a base for the ministry of Jesus (c/f Lk 4:31-32 and 7:10), was also at the heart of a fishing industry³⁰² She notes that the first disciples were from this industry and were intrinsically a part of the family groups who worked here. Others, such as Antoinette Clark Wire note how, in the text, the gospel writer shows that Jesus apparently

²⁹⁹ cf. Wire, *The Case for Mark Composed in Performance*, 48.

³⁰⁰ Robbins, *Jesus the Teacher*., 20.

³⁰¹ Hanson, “The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition,” 100.

³⁰² Hanson, “The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition,” 109

avoids visiting the towns around Galilee and instead of this he focuses on the villages.³⁰³

These observations show that the followers of Jesus were immersed in the social networks that were based upon the fishing industry. It follows then that the dissatisfactions of the people in this industry would be reflected both in the ministry of Jesus and in the gospel of Mark itself. Some of the pressures as Hanson points out, included the Roman and other taxes that were placed upon these people. She also notes how they were operating in a Hellenistic system, given that the Roman Empire regulated the way in which they worked and therefore lived.³⁰⁴ These people also needed to grapple with the moral codes of Hellenism that often bordered on cruelty. In fact it endorsed systemic cruelty with its practice of slavery. Thus while most people around for instance Galilee were ethnically and religiously based Jews it was likely that there was considerable fall off from the detailed \ practice of Judaism. It has already been pointed out above that Peter admitted he found the details of the Jewish law impossible to carry out (Acts 15). For somebody such as Jesus who was moving amongst the people in this industry, one could imagine he saw the necessity of some sort of reconciliation between the two world views that the people were living with.

One could imagine in such a scenario there would be the expectation or hope amongst such people that some type of new society could emerge. Was this “the Kingdom” of the Christ?

One of the factors that a socio-rhetorical interpretation of Mark’s passion could take into account is that while these people were being caught between Judaism and Hellenism, they were also to some extent practising Jews (despite

³⁰³ Note: Lecture given by Dr. Keith Dyer, Catholic Theological College Melbourne, 2015.

³⁰⁴ Hanson, “The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition,” 99.

inadequacies expressed by Peter in Acts 15:7-11). The Historian Hengel points out that despite pressures exerted on occupants of the Greco Roman Empire by the “bulldozer” of Hellenism, minimal numbers of Jews dropped away from their religion altogether.³⁰⁵ It was in fact the loyalty of ordinary Jews to their moral law that distinguished Jews from other peoples and cultures who had been and were being absorbed into Hellenism. There was indeed a desire amongst the people that Jesus was mixing with, to retain the basis of Judaism rather than capitulate. Historically, the Jews of the first century CE and the few centuries before this had as a whole, entered into a deliberate competition with Hellenism. After all, God had directly given them their Law.³⁰⁶

In her book Antoinette Clark Wire argues that Mark’s gospel had been evolved in continual story-telling and performance over the decades preceding the gospel and after the death of Jesus. The act of actually writing the stories down could have been triggered by some devastating crisis such as the loss of the Jerusalem Temple.³⁰⁷

On the one hand socio-rhetorical criticism provides some clues as to the nature of the “kingdom” anticipated by the followers of Jesus. But in itself one could not claim that by using this method, a “definition” of such a kingdom could be provided. However the method of interpretation called semiotic analysis or structural criticism may indeed provide an answer here. But as already stated, because of its lack of credibility, such an exploration will need to be deferred until Part II of *Is Christianity Unique?*

At any rate. Why was Mark so confident about the arrival of Christ’s Kingdom – confident enough to appear to make fun of

³⁰⁵ Note: Peter’s statement about non-observance of the law in Acts 15:

³⁰⁶ Martin Hengel. *Judaism and Hellenism*, translated by John Bowden. (London: SCM Press Ltd, 1981), 68-9.

³⁰⁷ Clark Wire, *The Case for Mark Composed in Performance*, 48.

the very people who jeered at Jesus when he was hanging from the cross and when everything had been stripped from him “Let the Christ, the King of Israel, come down now from the cross “ (Mk 16:32).

b. The Passion Narrative of the Gospel of Matthew

The use of Historical Criticism in the interpretation of Matthew’s gospel provides a considerable range of insights. However again, a wider range of interpretative methods would also help to demonstrate further that this gospel has a particular focus on the commandment that deals with one’s prime social group, that is, “Thou shalt not commit adultery.”

Consider some of the findings of the historical critical method to start with. These show that Matthew’s gospel deals in particular with relationships, especially relationships both between Jesus and the disciples and amongst the disciples themselves. It also shows growth in the ability of the disciples to take on responsibility for the message of Jesus. The gospel also deals with the relationship between Christian Jews and mainstream Judaism. At the time of writing (c.a. 85 CE) the Pharisees were emerging as the leadership group within Judaism and their relationships with Christian Jews was becoming more strained.³⁰⁸ In fact it was around this time that the community of Matthew found themselves to be ostracised from the Synagogue altogether. A decision made by the Jewish leadership at Jamnia prescribed that a prayer should be said in each Synagogue that placed a curse on the followers of

³⁰⁸ Raymond E. Brown, *The Death of the Messiah: From Gethsemane to the Grave. A Commentary on the Passion Narratives in the Four Gospels. Vol 1* (Doubleday: New York, 1993),360-2.

Jesus.³⁰⁹ This has been noted in previous pages. The position of Christian Jews within the Jewish Synagogue and Judaism itself became untenable. But for so many Christian Jews, especially those who formed the base community of Matthew's gospel, mainstream Judaism was the group with whom these people had been identified since birth.³¹⁰

The text of Matthew suggests that it was written from the context of a Judaic background.³¹¹ The writer therefore had to come to grips with the issue at hand. Socio-rhetorical criticism helps to uncover the anguish behind the text of the gospel.

Within the text Matthew insists on a Judaic heritage in the background of Jesus and implicitly in the background of his followers, whether of the 30's CE or the 80's CE (including auditor/readers). An indication of this insistence is the ongoing recollection of Old Testament prophets and in particular Isaiah e.g. Mt 3:3. This heavy emphasis on prophets in the gospel shows how Matthew's community continues to make their claim on the heritage of Judaism. Indeed, their position as followers of Jesus is presented as the fulfilment of Judaism. Thus Matthew recalls the statement "Do not think I have come to abolish the law or the prophets" (Mt. 5:17). This statement is unique to Matthew³¹²

From the beginning of Matthew's gospel the identity of Jesus himself is presented as someone who has grown up within the Jewish community. The genealogy of Jesus is traced back as far as Abraham (Mt. 1:1) Then, soon after the infant narratives in the opening chapters the relationship between Jesus and God is presented in terms of a "Father-son" bond "This is my beloved son" (Mt. 3:17). This identity of Jesus as the "Son of

³⁰⁹ Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 165.

³¹⁰ Senior, *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Matthew*, 12.

³¹¹ Senior, *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Matthew*, 13.

³¹² Burton H. Throckmorton, Jr, *Gospel Parallels: A Synopsis of the First Three Gospels* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1979), 21.

God” is again highlighted in the passion narrative. Like Mark in his passion narrative, Matthew identifies Jesus as the “Son of God”. But he also puts emphasis on their relationship of trust. He also ties this in with the present angst that was being experienced in his own community who were being separated from their Jewish roots. It is therefore interesting to note the slight distinction between Matthew and Mark’s description of the people who mocked Jesus when he was on the cross. Mark refers to these people as being the passers by, the chief priests and also the scribes who were mocking Jesus about his “kingdom”. But Matthew includes “the elders” amongst those who mock Jesus. This shifts the connotations of the text. On the one hand the community of Matthew knew that the whole priestly class and the cultural centre of Jerusalem had already been destroyed. But the “elders” of the Jews, namely the Pharisees, were still in a power-position over Matthew’s community. Thus the mockery of the elders at the crucifixion would have relevance in the here and now of about 85 CE. Rather than sounding a note of irony to Matthew’s community, it was a reminder to them that Jesus, like themselves, had also been ostracised from mainstream Judaism. The words used in the mockery of the elders and others, “He has trusted in God. Let him rescue him now if he wants him” (Mt. 26:43) reflects that Matthew’s community, has now being banned from the group that until now, they had considered to be their family. Judaism had been their prime social support group. But now Matthew’s community had to develop a new relationship between each other, a relationship with the resurrected Jesus and a new relationship with God. That is, and here there is a different slant on the irony altogether, - “if God wants them!” They had to be convinced that God did in fact “want them”.

In Matthew’s emphasis on “trust” in the Passion there is also an echo of the temptations of Jesus at the start of the Gospel, especially the middle temptation (Mt. 4:1-11). In a metaphorical sense it could be argued that the devil’s first temptation about breaking a fast relates to material possessions

as such. The third temptation of the devil about power over the Empires of the world relates to power and control of one's destiny. The temptation about angels bearing up Jesus if he throws himself off the pinnacle of the Temple has special relevance to Matthew's community and his passion narrative. It is connected with social support structures. There is a temptation here is to rely on one's social support structures to intervene and "save the day". But the individual (and group) need to find their own way. If Jesus, in terms of the middle temptation, were to throw himself off the temple roof and expect his prime social group (God and his angels) to save him, then there would be a presumption here that conflicts with the true meaning of trust.

In the context of these temptations, the relationship between Jesus and his Father is defined in terms of trust. The words of mockery in Matthew's passion narrative make an allusion to the middle temptation and the deep sense of aloneness that Jesus had now embraced at the crucifixion.

In the above pages of this inquiry into *Is Christian Morality Unique?* and in discussions about the three key commandments the observation has been made, that the terms used to describe these commandments constantly shift around in order to further develop their meaning. This also prevents them from being "locked" into a single phrase that can then be misinterpreted. Thus in the case of Matthew the importance of trust and its connection to social supports is developed.

Throughout the gospel of Matthew there is a constant redaction process of Mark going on in order to explore further the relationships that were being tested in the Passion. Examples are as follows. Mark recounts how Judas kissed Jesus in the betrayal (Mk 14:45). Matthew adds that Jesus asked Judas "Friend why are you here?" (Mt 26:50). Also, Mark recounts how "they all... fled" (Mk. 14:50). But Matthew notes that "all the disciples... fled" (Mt 26:56). Also again, it was

Matthew who recalled the warning sent by the wife of Pilate about having nothing to do with this innocent man (Mt. 27:19). Later he goes on to say Pilate claimed to be innocent of his blood (Mt 27:24). Then Matthew notes how the Jews called out “His blood be upon us and our children” (Mt. 27:25). Such a quote reflects the strained relationship between the followers of Jesus at the time of Matthew and mainstream Judaism. Then, at the time of Jesus’ death, Mark says “he breathed his last” (Mk 15:37). Yet even here Matthew presents Jesus in terms of relationship. Thus he says “He yielded up his spirit” (Mt. 27:50).

As well as these redactions in the passion narrative There is a gradual preparation and bonding of the disciples amongst themselves and with Jesus that takes place over the length of the Matthew’s gospel. This is contrasted with increasing conflict between Jesus and the Pharisees. Thus there are phrases used to describe the Pharisees such as “serpents, you brood of vipers” (Mt. 23:33). In such phrases a culmination of the rejection by mainstream Judaism of the followers of Jesus is reflected in Matthew’s Passion. Indeed this rejection is so prominent that some scholars have suggested that historically, the gospel of Matthew has been used as an excuse for on-going persecution of Jews and the anti-Semitism that erupted in World War Two.³¹³

In any case, historical critical exegesis and socio-rhetorical criticism show that mainstream Judaism rejected both Jesus and his followers. These approaches to interpretation also show how a gradual development of trust between Jesus and his disciples was taking place. But we are still left with a question as to whether or not Matthew the writer considered the bond of trust here would be strong enough to hold the

³¹³ Wayne A. Meeks, “A Nazi New Testament Professor Reads His Bible: The Strange Case of Gerhard Kittel” in *The Idea of Biblical Interpretation: Essays in Honor of James L. Kugel*. Edited by Hindy Najman and Judith H Newman (Leiden: Boston: Brill, 2004), 513-541

followers of Jesus together and on their own, into the future. At the end of the gospel Jesus tells his disciples to “disciple others” and he said that he would be with them until the end of time (Mt 28:16-20). But would the group be strong enough for this? Another method of interpretation (to be explored in Part II) might help to reveal an answer here. But in the meantime, a reader of Matthew’s gospel can be satisfied that his Passion narrative has a particular stress on relationship.

c. The Passion Narrative in the Gospel of Luke

It has already been noted that because the Passion Narratives across the gospels are very similar, the redactions of Mark that are taken by Matthew and Luke show up their particular interests.

Mark’s narrative shows the stark reality of destitution. This was being faced by all Jews at the time of 70 CE when Jerusalem, its Temple and its worship culture were all being destroyed. Matthew’s gospel shows some deviations from Mark to reflect the present situation of Christian Jews who were now being ostracized from mainstream Judaism.

What was the position of Luke’s community and how is this reflected in the Passion Narratives? We have already considered how Mark’s gospel plumbs the depths of material deprivation as reflected in the commandment “Thou shalt not steal.” Matthew’s gospel plumbs the depths of social isolation as reflected in the commandment “Thou shalt not commit adultery.” Does Luke deal with the commandment “Thou shalt not kill” and if so how?

Associated with this latter commandment is self-determination and the empowerment of others. When we consider the text of

Luke's Passion Narrative as compared with that of Mark and Matthew, we find that Luke puts a stress on self-determination. Recall that Luke was writing for a largely Gentile community.³¹⁴ In fact the emerging Church was becoming predominantly Gentile. It was having to face up to the question as to whether or not such a community could continue on when it was not only cut off from its Judaic heritage (viz. the Synagogue) but it also had a reduced proportion of members who had been raised as Jews and who were educated in Jewish heritage. Luke presents Jesus in such a way as to show that despite all his powerlessness at the time, he still had some degree of control over his destiny. He was still "passing on" his legacy to his followers and empowering others.

Consider some details of the text. On the one hand all three synoptic gospels begin the passion story with the disciples asking about where the Passover supper should be held (Mk 14:12, Mt..26:17, Lk 22:9)). But in Luke Jesus gives an order to Peter and John specifically to "Go and prepare the Passover supper" (Lk 22:8). It was they who would deal with the details. Then at the supper itself, as distinct from the other two gospels, Jesus again gives an order to the disciples "Take this and divide it amongst yourselves." (Lk. 22:17) Even while on the cross, Jesus exercises power. He shows his power to forgive others "Father forgive them, for they know not what they do." (Lk. 23:34). And even in the act of dying he exercises self-determination as he addresses God, "Father into thy hands I commit my spirit" (Lk 25:45).

Luke's gospel is considered to be optimistic as compared with other gospels and this becomes evident at the time of the passion as well. For instance Jesus says to the repentant thief "Today you will be with me in paradise" Lk. 23:43).³¹⁵

³¹⁴ Mark Allan Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* New York/ Mahwah: Paulist Press, 1990.51.

³¹⁵ Kasemann, *Essays on New Testament Themes*, 66.

In his overall social context and as a writer, Luke is reflecting on the encouragement given by Jesus to the apostles (and the Gentile-dominated church) to take charge. Therefore Luke the writer also appears to make excuses for major players and he appears to downplay their guilt. Thus when Jesus warns Simon Peter that he will deny him in the near future he says “Simon, Simon, behold Satan demanded to have you.” (22:31). Here, blame in a sense, is shifted to Satan.³¹⁶ Then when Jesus is in the garden and finds the disciples sleeping, Luke adds an excuse for them, that is, the “disciples sleeping for sorrow.” (22:45). Also, while Mark highlights that “they all forsook him and fled” (Mk. 15:40), and Matthew adds to this saying “all the disciples forsook him and fled.” (Mt. 26:56), in contrast Luke leaves this desertion by followers out altogether.

Luke also plays down the guilt of other parties. And, he has Jesus addressing them. Thus Mark says a crowd **from** the chief priests and scribes and elders arrived in the garden of Gethsemane (Mk 14:43). But Luke says the chief priests and officers of the temple and elders actually came to the garden themselves. And, Jesus addresses them. (Lk 22:52-3). Luke’s Jesus also, in a sense, addresses Peter immediately after Peter’s denial of him. The text says “And the Lord turned and looked at Peter” (Lk 22:61). Again, when Luke tells his readers how the chief priests and the rulers and the people cried out for his crucifixion he adds “and their voices prevailed.” (23:22). It is as if it was the voices, or the overall governance system itself which allowed the voices to be so loud, that is what determined Jesus’ fate. Luke also relates the story of Jesus being sent to Herod. Herod by omission in the text, did not actually condemn Jesus but sent him back to Pilate (Lk 23:6-12). Pilate in turn strongly protested his own innocence of the death sentence and he physically washed his hands of such

³¹⁶ Powell, *What are They Saying about Luke*, 48.

guilt as the symbol of this (Lk 23:22-3). Another party to the crucifixion, apparently deemed guilty by Matthew, are the Jews. Matthew has them calling out “His blood be upon us and upon our children.” (Mt. 27:24). However Luke leaves out this call. In contrast, Luke adds in another incident which arouses sympathy instead for the Jewish people rather than blame. In Luke Jesus addresses the “daughters of Jerusalem” with a prediction of their own dire experiences to come when Jerusalem would be destroyed in the future (in fact in 70 CE). Thus, even in all his own powerlessness, Luke’s Jesus is able to empathise with these women and their future (23:28). Historically speaking, dates have some relevance here. Scholars consider that Luke was writing in about 85 CE.³¹⁷ The crucifixion of Jesus took place about 33 CE.³¹⁸ The destruction of Jerusalem took place in 70 CE. There is a 37 gap between the Jesus’ passion and the time of the destruction of the Temple and Jerusalem. But in 85 CE, fifteen years after the catastrophe, the Jewish population was still reeling from what had happened. In a sense then, it is Luke the writer looking back at what happened, perhaps more so than the historical Jesus looking forward. In any case Luke is presenting the Jewish population here in a sympathetic light and Luke shows the readiness of Jesus to empathise with them. And, as stated above, Luke goes further here because he omits altogether the cry related by Matthew, that is, “His blood be upon us and our children.” (Mt: 27:25).

Even while on the cross Luke’s Jesus continued to exercise his own self-determination and the empowerment of others. Mark (15::27) and Matthew (Mt. 27:38) mention the two robbers crucified with Jesus and the way they jeered at him. But Luke picks up on another angle here. He tells how one of the robbers chided the other and this robber said to Jesus “Lord remember me when you come into your Kingdom.” (Lk 23:41)

³¹⁷ Conzelmann, *The Theology of St Luke*, 12-13.

³¹⁸ Conzelmann, *The Theology of St Luke*, 12-13.

Jesus promised him... “This day you will be with me in paradise.” (Lk 23:43)

Also again, while Jesus was on the cross, as with the Mark and Matthew, Luke records how Jesus was mocked by onlookers. But there is a slight difference here as well. Mark says it was the chief priests and scribes who led the mockery (Mk 15:8). Matthew says it was the chief priests and elders (Mk 27:20). Luke says “but the rulers scoffed at him” (Lk 23:35). Here it is the rulers who hold the power position. Luke’s crucifixion reflects the context of a secular society which is nominally at least, based on the governance model of democracy and the voice of the people. In this sense it is the people who are supposed to be the rulers. Indeed in his *Acts of the Apostles*, Luke devotes considerable reflection to the nature and role of “the Word” in such a society. Implicitly in *Acts* his many references and lengthy descriptions of “the word” also relate to the “voice” and authority of the people. Against such a back drop it is therefore fitting that Luke should mention “the people” both in the decision made about the crucifixion (Lk 23:4) and also in the mockery given to Jesus while he was on the cross. Consider the differences. Both Mark and Matthew say “And those that passed by derided him, wagging their heads...” (Mk 15:29), (Mt 27:39). But Luke says “And the people stood by, watching.” (Lk 23:35). One is reminded here of the adage that “evil happens when “good people do nothing”.

Even in the situation of the powerlessness of Luke’s Jesus, when both rulers and soldiers were mocking him, there is still the hint that he is indeed “the Chosen One” which is a phrase they use. Their mockery call to mind the power of the Emperor himself.³¹⁹ Thus,

³¹⁹ PBS “The Roman Empire in the First Century” (Perrysburg, Oh: Public Broadcasting Service)
<https://www.pbs.org/empires/romans/empire/emperors.html>, [accessed 22 Oct 2018].

And the people stood by, watching; but the rulers scoffed at him, saying, "He saved others; let him save himself, if he is the Christ of God, his Chosen One!" The soldiers also mocked him coming up and offering him vinegar, and saying, "If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself!" There was also an inscription over him, "This is the King of the Jews." (Lk 23:35-38).

In the light of the resurrection that was to follow the crucifixion, there is an added touch of irony here. The rulers and soldiers may have thought they were reminding Jesus that it was the Emperor who was the real "Chosen One". But no Emperor could rise from the dead!

What sort of discussion is there about Luke's passion narrative amongst biblical scholars?

A narrative critic such as Powell points out that throughout the text of Luke's gospel, it is God who is the main actor. Powell says there is a "divine purpose" that unifies Luke's two volumes.³²⁰ There is also a movement towards giving over power within the church to the Gentiles. And, there is also a movement towards exaltation.³²¹ Powell says this is echoed in the crucifixion itself and after Jesus dies. For instance it is the gentile Centurion who gives glory to God (Lk 23:47). This movement towards exaltation extends to the Ascension as well.³²² Thus the first account of the Ascension (Lk 24:51) refers to the disciples, and the second account of the Ascension in *Acts* 1:9 "he was lifted up and a cloud took him out of their sight" refers to the beginning of the Church. Narrative critics claim that overall, the gospel of Luke and *Acts* is not only optimistic but it moves towards an "exaltation" as the gospel finally reaches Rome the ruling centre of the known world.

³²⁰ Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke*, 12.

³²¹ Michael Trainor, "Matthew's Passion Narrative: The Physical and Sexual Abuse of Jesus (Part One)" *Compass: A Review of Topical Theology* 36, no. 2 (Melbourne, Vic: Sacred Heart Theological College Croydon, 2002), 79.

³²² Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke*, 73.

Nevertheless, despite the optimism of Luke's text, there is still a question about how secure the base of the Church actually was in the time of Luke, now that it mainly consisted of Gentile Christians. According to Rhoads, even though Mark's reader/auditor may have expected a parousia, the Church into the future would continue to recognize itself as being on the "edge" of society, always expecting something better.³²³ Some critics such as Conzelman claim that there is an implied delay of the "parousia" (the second coming of Christ) which was now being extended into the prolonged Age of the Church.³²⁴ But the narrative critic Powell says that a claim that auditor/readers of Luke thought that the parousia was only delayed is too simple an answer here.³²⁵ He says that there is need for an increased study of the social and political commitments that were being made in the gospel of Luke that transcend the somewhat simplistic idea of a "parousia". Powell also says Luke's gospel has social and political categories of writing that should be examined as well as its theological dimensions.³²⁶ One could suggest here that an example of this wider dimension that included sociology and politics would be a study of Luke's interest in "the voice" of the people and democracy. In relation to this point of Powell's about social and political implications, Donald Senior points out that another problem that needed to be dealt with in regard to Luke's Gentile-based community was as follows. "The outward thrust of the Gospel could clash with the need for community cohesiveness in the face of the dominant culture and values of the world."³²⁷ Over and above this, a point raised by Conzelmann and a point that a socio rhetorical interpreter would be likely to explore, is whether or not Luke was trying to present a Christianity that the Roman world

³²³ Rhoads, *Mark as Story*, 141.

³²⁴ Conzelmann, *The Theology of St. Luke*, 14.

³²⁵ Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke*, 43.

³²⁶ Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke*, 82.

³²⁷ Senior, *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Luke*, 24.

would see as politically non-threatening. Conzelmann for instance says that Luke distinguished between the “then” of 33 CE and the “now.” of 85 CE³²⁸

It appears that Historical Critical Exegesis, narrative criticism and socio-rhetorical criticism do show up Luke’s optimism and belief in the on-going action of God in the evolving church. They also show up Luke’s special interest in power and empowerment as summed up in the commandment of “Thou shalt not kill”. However it could be argued that they fail to show clearly if and how Luke resolves the question as to how the community can “move out” into the Gentile world without losing its own cohesion and its standards of morality. Recall for instance Paul’s outbursts over the failings of the Gentile Christian Corinthians in the 50’s CE. “It is actually reported that there is immorality among you, and of a kind that is not found even among pagans..” (1 Cor. 5:1). Into the future would a Gentile based church as proposed by Luke, need to be upbraided in the same way?

In Part Two of this overall look at *Is Christian Morality Unique?* Semiotic analysis will be used to show how the structure of Luke’s gospel and Acts actually do provide a “blueprint” or as Aristotle would call it a “constitutions” for a Gentile church to model itself upon. This would help to make it more secure.

In the meantime, the exegesis above, show that Luke has particular interest in self-determination and the empowerment of others. Such a control of one’s destiny relates to the Commandment of “Thou shalt not kill.” By showing that the person of Jesus was able to retain and grow in self-determination there was an endorsement that they also could make it.

³²⁸ Conzelmann, *The Theology of St Luke*, 12-13.

Chapter Nine

Comparison with Other World Religions

Conclusion about Uniqueness

In the pages above it has been demonstrated, mainly using Historical Critical interpretation, that there is a continued focus on money, power and relationship in the writings of Paul, Mark, Matthew and Luke. However the leading question of this research project asks how “unique” is such a focus?

A way to explore this question would be to ask to what extent do other world religions also put a focus on the morality of money, power and relationship. An obvious place to start here is Judaism. At the same time a definition to start with, of what money, power and relationship entail, could also be made. Then the likelihood of a focus on these three things in other world religions would become self-evident.

Consider the focus on power. This has ramifications as pointed out above, in discussions about the commandment of ‘Thou shalt not kill.’ (cf. traditionally number five of the Ten Commandments) Paul made reference to this commandment under such references as ‘violent theft’ (cf. 1 Cor. 6:9). Mark dealt with it in terms of the commitment of one’s destiny to a following of Jesus Christ (cf. Mark 10:17-31). Matthew discussed it in terms of belittling the dignity of others (cf. Matthew 5:22). Luke had a focus on self-determination (cf. Luke 25:45). All these approaches touch upon one’s life, dignity and freedom. At times in Paul and in the synoptic

gospels the commandment is mentioned explicitly in conjunction with the other two for example in Mark 10:19.

If one discusses power in the general sense (independently of religion), morality concerns about power become self-evident even without the prioritisation of it that takes place in religions. If people want to build a safe society, survival of one's life should be at the head of a values list. Thus it can be assumed that any type of society that is trying to clarify its priorities would put the survival of life amongst its members to the forefront. Such priority is reflected in the animal kingdom as well. Here for example parents are prepared to endanger and even sacrifice their own lives for the sake of their young. Generally even hunting animals such as lions or tigers, do not kill or eat their own species.

Consider the second of the three Commandment being focussed upon here that is, "Thou shalt not commit adultery" (cf. traditionally number six of the Ten Commandments)/ This Commandment incorporates relationship as such within one's prime social group. Survival of a species for instance depends on stable and nurturing relationships within the group. Thus again, one could expect that if a social value system were to be viable it would put priority on the stability of marriage. Such a priority would also for instance extend to doubts that people would have, about any lifestyle that uses other people and desensitises their ability to form a stable, long-term relationship.

Consider the third of the three commandments "Thou shalt not steal." (cf. traditionally number seven of the Ten Commandments). This relates to the importance of ownership and material security for both the individual and their prime social group, into the future. Actually it would also connect with the wanton destruction of habitat for non-human species as well. Again, despite obvious failures on the part of present societies in this latter case, one would expect that priority

should be given to to the rights of ownership in any type of viable society.

Such reflections lead us to consider major world religions other than Christianity. Obviously, because of cultural and historical differences in their origins, and insofar as these religions do have a focus on money, power and relationship, then such emphases would be expressed in a range of ways. In the following paragraphs it is proposed to look at the Scriptures of Judaism, of Islam, Taoism, and Hinduism. It is also proposed to consider the basic social structure of Buddhism.

Judaism

In the case of **Judaism**, as already noted, there is a heavy emphasis on all Ten Commandments including “Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery and Thou shalt not steal.” (Exodus 20: 13-15).

In the preceding pages here there has been discussion about the Council of Jerusalem in the early Christian Church which took place in the 50’s CE. It was argued in this discussion that, “the bar” of the three commandments was raised so as to include cruelty as such (cf. “blood”), uncommitted sex as such (cf. ‘fornication’) and unfair business methods (cf. ‘strangling’). This decision of the Council set a direction for morality in the early church. But does this mean that the prohibitions in Judaism about money, power and relationship only stayed at the bare minimum level of the commandments? Or, was there an attempt within the Commandments themselves to highlight and emphasise these three commandments about “Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal” ?

In the Catholic tradition the Commandments of “Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal” are numbered as numbers five, six and seven in the list of the Ten Commandments.³²⁹ However if we continue on to numbers eight, nine and ten within the Commandments, we find there are ‘echoes’ of the same prohibitions that are put forward in numbers five, six and seven. In this sort of repetition it appears that people are expected to extend the prohibitions of the Commandments into their own attitudes as well. Consider. Commandment number eight says “Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.” This presents a prohibition against the destruction of someone else’s reputation and possibly freedom which would affect their self-determination. Number nine says “Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s wife.” This extends the prohibition against adultery into one’s attitude towards women in general. Number ten says “Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s goods.” This extends the prohibition against stealing into one’s attitudes relating to envy, jealousy etc. over the property of others.

Thus Judaism itself attempts to put a priority on morality concerning power, relationship and money in a way that has parallels with the emphasis taken by Christianity. In fact it provides a base for the Christian approach. Also, in the psalms and prophets of the Old Testament a “style of approach” to the Commandments was provided to Paul and the gospel writers. That is, attitudes towards these were embedded into ancient texts even while they were not explicitly mentioned.

Consider a couple of passages from Jewish Scriptures:

1. 1 Samuel 2:4-5

The bows of the mighty are broken	(cf. power)
-----------------------------------	-------------

³²⁹ Broderick, *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, 124.

But the weak are clothed with strength	
Those with plenty must labour for bread But the hungry need work no more	(cf. money)
The childless wife has children now But the fruitful wife bears no more	(cf. relationship)

2. Isaiah 33:15

He who walks righteously and speaks uprightly, Who despises the gain of oppression,	(cf. money)
Who shakes his hands, lest they hold a bribe,	(cf. self-determination and power)
Who stops his ears from hearing of bloodshed	(cf. violence and power)
And shuts his eyes from looking upon evil	(cf. pornography and relationship)

Islam

Briefly consider **Islam**. Islam, along with Judaism and Christianity, is described as an Abrahamic religion. It is a religion with a heavy emphasis on the moral law as set out in the Jewish Ten Commandments. As in Judaism, Islam has an emphasis on the observance of time. Thus people are encouraged for instance to ritually pray at five different times of the day. The book of Islam, the *Koran* recognises the

validity of the Jewish Old Testament and its Ten Commandments. In fact there are parallels to the Commandments scattered through the Koran, for example,

Cf. Ten Commandments “I am the Lord thy God”	Koran quotes ³³⁰
1. “Thou shalt not have strange gods before Me”	“There is no God except one God” (47:19)
2. “Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain.”	“Make not God’s name an excuse for your oaths”(2:224)
3. “Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day.”	“When the call for the Friday Prayer is made, hasten to the remembrance of God and leave off your business” (62:9)
4. “Honour thy father and thy mother.”	“Do good to your parents, relatives and neighbours” (4:36)
5. “Thou shalt not kill.”	“If anyone has killed one person it is as if he had killed the whole mankind5:32)
6. “Thou shalt not	“Do not come near

³³⁰ Cf. The Koran Translated with notes by N.J. Darwood (London: Penguin Books, 1990)

commit adultery.”	adultery, it is an indecent deed and a way for other evils.” (17:32)
7. “Thou shalt not steal.”	“As for the thief, male or female, cut off his or her hands, but those who repent after a crime and reform shall be forgiven by God for God is forgiving and kind.” (5:38-39).
8. “Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.”	“They invoke a curse of God if they lie.” (24:7) `
9. “Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s wife.”	“Do not covet the bounties that God has bestowed more abundantly on some of you than on others” (4:32)
10. “Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour’s goods.”	“Do not covet the bounties that God has bestowed more abundantly on some of you than on others” (4:32)

Over the last fifteen hundred years Islam has evolved in its own way, thus both affecting culture and being affected by it. As it is often pointed out, Islam has many cultural

expressions.³³¹ Yet here also there is an awareness of the need for controls relating to money, power and relationship. The *Sharia* laws of Islam have a heavy emphasis on marriage stability and there is a strong prohibition against adultery (*Quran* 17:32). There is also an emphasis on the brotherhood of Islam and its members are exhorted to help out the poor (*Quran* 2:273). Such brotherhood is expressed in annual pilgrimages in which people wear the same white clothes as a symbol of solidarity and equality. Thus whatever the wealth of individual pilgrims they wear the same clothes as everyone else. The basic power structures in Islam are based on religious law and the family.³³²

Taoism

Taoism is a traditional way of life that is found in China. It's basic "rule of life" is found in the *Tao Te Chien*. On the one hand one cannot expect to find Commandments from the Jewish or Christian religions to be quoted in such a text. Yet the text actually follows a similar approach that is found in Paul and the gospels. Threaded through the text is an inference that is arguably parallel to that of the three key commandments discussed above. Consider the quotes from the *Tao Te Chien* as follows:³³³

³³¹ Michael Laffan, "Religious Practices and Cultural Expressions," *Islam in SouthEast Asia* (Asia Society.org), http://sites.asiasociety.org/education/islam_in_seasia/essays-religious.htm[accessed 0 4/09/18].

³³² David J. Jonsson *Islamic Economics and the "Final Jihad"*, 131.

³³³ Lao Tzu *Tao Te Chien* (London: Penguin classics, 1961).

1. Book One, Chapter 3, Verse 8

Not to honour men or worth will keep the people from contention;	(cf. power)
Not to value goods which are hard to come by will keep them from theft;	(cf. money)
Not to display what is desirable will keep them from being unsettled of mind”	(cf. sex)

2. Book One Chapter 19, Verse 43

Exterminate the sage, discard the wise And the people will benefit a hundredfold;	(cf. power)
Exterminate benevolence, discard rectitude,And the people will again be filial;	(cf. relationship)
Exterminate ingenuity, discard profit, And there will be no more thieves and bandits	(cf. money)

3. Book One, Chapter 29, Verse 68

“Therefore the sage avoids excess, extravagance and arrogance”

(cf. money, sex, power)

4. Book Two, Chapter 46, Verse 105

There is no crime greater than having too many desires	(cf. relationship)
There is no disaster greater than not being content	(cf. power)
There is no misfortune greater than being covetous	(cf. money)

5. (Book Two Chapter 67, Verse 164)

I have three treasures which I hold and cherish	
The first is known as compassion,	(cf. relationship)
The second is known as fugality	(cf. money)
The third is known as not daring to take the lead in the empire	(cf. power)

Hinduism

Consider Hinduism. Unlike Christianity and Islam, Hinduism does not originate from Judaism and its moral base of the Ten Commandments. However the morality focus of Hinduism can also be found in its emphasis on controls over money, power and relationship.

How so? The chief Scriptural texts in Hinduism are the *Gita* and the *Upamioshads*. A key theme in the *Gita* is the imperative that people have to do their duty. The importance of this is spelt out in the *Gita*. Within an extensive story, one section of a family is obliged to go to war against another section of the family because of injustice that was committed by the latter. In such case duty requires people to override, wealth, family connections and personal safety in order to assert justice. Thus, even if the next generation is wiped out and with it the continued remembrance of oneself in the after-life, duty still has to come first.³³⁴

A quote to follow from the internet shows how the *Gita* parallels the three commandments relating to money, power and relationship.

In the *Gita* a Pandava brother Arjuna loses his will to fight and has a discussion with his charioteer Krishna, about duty, action and renunciation. The *Gita* has three major themes – knowledge, action and love.³³⁵

³³⁴ R.C.Zaehner, *The Bhagavad Gita: with a commentary based on the original sources* (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1969).

³³⁵ Note: Google definition from URL
https://www.google.com.au/search?rlz=1C1AOHY_enAU708AU708&ei=MRbNW7isMMzWvAS_pZmoDQ&q=what+is+the+theme+of+the+bhagavad+gita&oq=what

If we think of knowledge as relating to something acquired and action relating to power and love relating to relationship then the parallel here becomes more obvious.

Buddhism

Buddhism is a derivative of Hinduism. Here, there is a more moderate exercise of morality³³⁶. In Buddhism, the centre of a community is to be found in the monastery. Here monks and nuns are celibate. They are poor and their destiny is bound in with that of the group called the Sangha. Adherents of Buddhism are expected to pattern their lives on that of the monastery. Thus on the one hand individual Buddhists may have personal possessions, self-determination and a life partner and family. But in each of these areas the monastery sits at the centre and value structure of their lives. Thus it puts forward the need for both control and moderation in each of these areas. Such a lifestyle, based on the elimination of desire is described as the “Buddhist Way of Perfection.”³³⁷

Another Topic

In many ways the influence of the monastery on the life of ordinary Buddhists has parallels with the influence that was exercised by Catholic Religious Orders when they were running the local parish or secondary school. This was the

+is+the+theme+of+the+Gita&gs_l=psy-ab.1.0.0i22i30k115.9455.16729.0.20297.57.29.0.0.0.0.290.4501.0j8j12.20.0....0...1.64.psy-ab..49.2.552...33i10k1.0.TgbzldlVRwY

³³⁶ L. Adams Beck, *The Splendour of Asia: the story and teaching of the Buddha* (London: W. Collins Sons & Co. Ltd, c.1927)

³³⁷ Robert C. Broderick, *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Inc, 1975), 81.

primary missionary model for Religious Life in the early part of the twentieth century.³³⁸ Such a reflection actually brings us to another topic. The link-in between the vows of poverty, chastity and obedience taken by Catholic Religious and the three key commandments about money power and relationship, should be fairly obvious for a reader by now. But in traditional literature on Religious Life prior to the Vatican II Council of the 1960's (and possibly now as well), there was not (yes not), an obvious link made between the vows and the three key commandments discussed at length above.³³⁹ The reasons why this has been the case is a topic that reaches beyond the scope of this present research project. Therefore the topic can only be alluded to here. But there will be further reference to it in a chapter called Implications at the end of *Is Christian Morality Unique? Part Two*.

Conclusion about the Uniqueness of Christianity's approach

In the above quick overview of major world religions and their parallels with Christianity, one can raise doubts about how unique the Christian focus on money, power and relationship actually is. Hopefully it has been demonstrated that there is a "uniqueness" about the emphases that has been taken by Christians in the way these three Commandments are interpreted and practiced. But one could also conclude that the actual focus on these three commandments is not so unique after all.

³³⁸ Cf. Stephen Reid, Robert Dixon and Noel Connelly, *See I am Doing a New Thing: A report on the 2009 Survey of Catholic Religious Institutes in Australia* (Fitzroy: Australian Catholic Bishops Conference and Catholic Religious Australia, 2010).

³³⁹ Cf. L. Colin, *The Practice of the Vows* (Cork: The Mercier Press Limited, 1954).

On the other hand, there are two dimensions of Christianity that need to be further explored in Part Two of this research project of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* The first of these relates to the basic social structure of Christianity. This cannot be taken for granted. Thus how does the Christian focus on money, power and relationship play out against its own social context? The second dimension relates to a process of identification. A follower of Jesus is challenged to identify with the living person of Jesus in their practice of morality. How does this take place?

In an effort to respond to these questions in Part II the problem about interpretation of Scripture as raised in the opening chapter, needs to be taken into account. Within the academic world of Biblical Literature there is a dominance of Historical Critical Exegesis in gospel interpretation. This, as already discussed, is a diachronic approach to Scripture. To some extent it can be complemented with synchronic approaches such as narrative criticism and socio-rhetorical criticism. But a synchronic approach such as structural/semiotic analysis is more likely to conflict with the established method of gospel interpretation. But, one could protest, a semiotic analysis of the gospels could demonstrate the underlying social structure of Christianity.

Semiotic analysis has a focus on the way the text uses words in order to construct a framework for itself and develop an overall and underlying line of logic. There is less focus on the historical background of the text or the meaning of the words. Semiotic analysis could show how a follower of Jesus can identify with him through the practice of their morality. It could also come up with what appears to be a radically different approach to understanding the gospels. As someone said when faced with such a semiotic analysis of the gospels, "Now it all makes sense."

But how does one deal with the disinterest and the lack of credibility amongst the majority of those approached about this “solution”? A quote from a recent article in the “Good Weekend” of *The Age* newspaper may be of some encouragement here:

In the 1940’s, writes Walter Issacson in *The Innovators*, one of the computer pioneers, Howard Aiken, reassured a student: “Don’t worry about people stealing an idea. If it’s original, you will have to stuff it down their throats.”³⁴⁰



³⁴⁰ Shelley Gare, “The Great Creativity Turn Off” *Good Weekend in The Age* (Melbourne: The Age, 6/10/18), Good Weekend 35.

Bibliography

Is Christian Morality Unique, Part 1

Adams, Edward. "First Century Models for Paul's Churches: Selected Scholarly Developments since Meeks." In *After the First Urban Christians: the Socio-scientific Study of Pauline Christianity Twenty-five Years Later*, editors, Todd Still and David Horrell. London: Bloomsbury Continuum, c. 2009.

Allison, Dale Jr. "Matthew: Structure, Biographical Impulse and the *Imitatio Christi*," In *The Four Gospels, Vol. II*. Editors, F. Van Segbroeck et al. Leuven: Leuven University Press, 1992.

_____. *The New Moses*. Minneapolis: Fortress Press, c. 1993.

_____. *Studies in Matthew: Interpretation past and present*. Grand Rapids, MI : Baker Academic, 2005.

Alter, Robert. *The Art of Biblical Narrative* (New York : Basic Books, c2011).Zrw

Anonymous, "Biblical Essay, The Jews in the New Testament: The Gospel According to Matthew." In *Scripture in Church* 38, n. 149. Dublin: Dominican Publications, 2008.

Aristotle, *Politics and Athenian Constitution*, edited and translated by John Warrington, London, J.M.Dent, E.P. Dutton, 1959.

Ascough, Richard S. "A Question of Death: Paul's Community-building Language in 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18." In *Journal of Biblical Literature* no 3. Atlanta: Society of Biblical Literature, 2004.

Attridge. H. W. "The First Letter of Paul to the Corinthians: Chapters 3-4." "Sex and Courts." In *Yale Bible Studies Series*. USA, New Haven: Yale University, c. 2016, <http://ark.divinity.edu.au/mod/url/view.php?id=3973/> [accessed March 2016].

_____. "The First Letter of Paul to the Corinthians: Chapter 7," "Marriage and Slavery." In *Yale Bible Studies Series*. New Haven, USA: Yale University, c. 2016, <http://ark.divinity.edu.au/mod/url/view.php?id=3974/> [accessed March 2016].

Aurelius, Marcus (Emperor of Rome 121-180). *The Golden Book of Marcus Aurelius*, translated by Meric Casaubon. London: J.M.Dent, 1906 .

Bacon, Benjamin. *Studies in Matthew*. London: Constable, 1930.

Balabanski, Vicky. "Mission in Matthew against the Horizon of Matthew 24." In *New Testament Studies*, 54. London: Cambridge University Press, 2008.

Barton, Stephen. "Historical Criticism and Social-Scientific Perspectives," *Hearing the New Testament: Strategies for interpretation*, Joel Green, ed. Grand Rapids, Michigan, and Carlisle: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co. and The Paternoster Press, 1995.

Adams Beck, L. *The Splendour of Asia: the story and teaching of the Buddha*. London: W. Collins Sons & Co. Ltd, c.1927.

BibleWalks.com "Capernaum"
<http://www.biblewalks.com/Sites/capernaum.html> [accessed
 30 August 2013]

Bock, Darrell L. "The Son of Man in Luke 5:24," In Bulletin
 for Biblical Research 1. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1991.

Bossmann, David M. "Christians and Jews Read the Gospel of
 Matthew Today" In Biblical Theology Bulletin 27, no. 2.
 Albany, NY: Biblical Theology Bulletin Inc., 1997.

Broderick, Robert C. The Catholic Encyclopedia.
 Nashville: Thomas Nelson Inc, 1975.

Bruce, F.F. "The Epistles of Paul." In Peake's Commentary on
 the Bible, edited by Matthew Black. London: T. Nelson 1962.

Byrne, Brendan. A Costly Freedom: A Theological Reading of
 Mark's Gospel. Strathfield: St Paul's Publications, 2008.

Catogero, Guido, Lawrence H. Starkey, "Eleaticism
 Philosophy" Encyclopaedia Britannica . USA: Encyclopaedia
 Britannica Inc. <https://www.britannica.com/topic/Eleaticism>
 [accessed 24 Oct 2018].

Canavan, Rosemary. Clothing the Body of Christ at Colossae.
 Tubingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2012.

Chabay, Ian. "Narratives in the context of Global Systems
 Science and ICT" [http://ec.europa.eu/digital-
 agenda/futurium/sites/futurium/files/Chabay%20I_Narratives%
 20in%20the%20context.pdf](http://ec.europa.eu/digital-agenda/futurium/sites/futurium/files/Chabay%20I_Narratives%20in%20the%20context.pdf) 4th March 2013., [accessed 20
 October 2013].

Clark Wire, Antoinette. The Case for Mark Composed in
 Performance. In Biblical Performance Criticism 3. Eugene,

Oregon: Cascade Books, 2011.

Colin L. The Practice of the Vows. Cork: The Mercier Press Limited, 1954.

Collins, Raymond. "The First Letter to the Thessalonians." In New Jerome Biblical Commentary. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, c. 1990.

Crosby, Michael H. House of Disciples: Church, Economics and Justice in Matthew. Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books, c. 1988.

Downing, F. Gerald. Cynics, Paul and the Pauline Churches. London and New York: Routledge, 1998.

Edwards, James R. "Markan Sandwiches: The Significance of Interpolations in Markan Narratives." In Novum Testamentum I 3. Grand Rapids: William B Eerdmans Publishing Company 1989.

Eerdmans Commentary on the Bible. James D.G. Dunn, general editor. John W Rogerson, Editor of Old Test. And Apocrypha. Grand Rapids, Michigan: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 2003.

Ehrman, B. "Paul as pastor." Yale: Yale university. [z37zzzzz3](#) [accessed march 2016].

Ellis, Peter. Seven Pauline Letters. Collegeville, Minn.: The Liturgical Press, 1982.

Fee, Gordon D. Paul's Letter to the Philippians. Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1995.

Fitzmyer, Joseph A. "Historical Criticism: its role in Biblical Interpretation and Church Life." In Theological Studies 56.

Baltimore: Theological Studies Inc. 1989.

_____. The Biblical Commission's Document "The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church": text and commentary. Roma: Editrice Pontificio Instituto Biblico, 1995.

_____. "The Letter to the Galatians," In New Jerome Biblical Commentary. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice Hall, 1990.

_____. "Introduction, Translation, Notes" In The Gospel According to Luke (I-Ix). New York: The Anchor Bible Doubleday, 1981.

_____. According to Paul: Studies in the Theology of the Apostle. New York: Paulist Press, c. 1993.

Flanagan, Neal M. New Testament Reading Guide: The Acts of the Apostles, 2nd ed. Collegeville, Minnesota: The Liturgical Press, 1964.

Forestell, J.Terence. "The Letters to the Thessalonians." In Jerome Biblical Commentary, edited by Raymond E. Brown et al. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1968.

France, R. T. "The Gospel of Matthew" In The New International Commentary on the New Testament. Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 2007

Fung, Ronald Y. K. The Epistle to the Galatians. Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1988.

Gadamer, Hans Georg. Truth and Method. London: Bloomsbury, 2013.

Gare, Shelley. "The Great Creativity Turn Off. " Good Weekend in The Age. Melbourne: The Age, 6/10/18.

Global Non-violent Action Database. "Gaius Caligula." Swathmore, PA: Swathmore College, <http://nvdatabase.swarthmore.edu/content/jewish-peasants-block-construction-statue-gaius-caligula-galilee-40-ce> [accessed 28th May 2016].

Gooder, Paula. "Reading Paul for the First Time." With Paul Gooder. Mpg Nottingham, England: St Johns, <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SBm-92NNKuga&feature=youtu.be/>(accessed March 2016).

Gorman, Michael. "Paul's Theology: A Dozen Fundamental Convictions." In *Apostle of the Crucified Lord*. Grand Rapids: W. B. Eerdmans, 2004.

Grieb, A Katherine. "Last Things First: Karl Barth's Theological Exegesis of 1 Corinthians in The Resurrection of the Dead." In *Scottish Journal of Theological Ltd*, 56(1):49+64 Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003.

Haenchen, Ernst. *The Acts of the Apostles: A Commentary*. Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1971.

Hanson, K. C. "The Galilean Fishing Economy and the Jesus Tradition." In *Biblical Theology Bulletin* 27, no. 2. Albany N.Y.: Biblical Theology Bulletin Inc., 1997.

Hare, Douglas. *The Theme of Jewish Persecution of Christians in the Gospel According to St Matthew*. Cambridge: Cambridge U. P., 1967.

Harrill, J. Albert. *Paul the Apostle: His Life and Legacy in their Roman Context*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012.

Harrington, Daniel J. *The Gospel of Matthew*, Collegeville, Minn. Liturgical Press, c. 1991.

Hengel, Martin. *Judaism and Hellenism*. Translated by John Bowden. London: SCM Press Ltd, 1981.

_____. *The "Hellenization" of Judaea in the First Century after Christ*. In Collaboration with Christoph Marksches. Translated by John Bowden. London: SCM Press Ltd, Philadelphia: Trinity Press International, 1989.

Holladay, Carl R. *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament: Interpreting the Message and Meaning of Jesus Christ*. Nashville: Abingdon Press, 2005.

Horrell, David G . *An Introduction to the Study of Paul*. 2nd ed. New York: T&T Clark, 2006.

Horsley, G. H. R. and Stephen Llewelyn. *New Documents Illustrating Early Christianity: A Review of the Greek Inscriptions and Papyri Published in 1977*. North Ryde, NSW: Ancient History Documentary Research Centre Macquarie University, 1981

Hunter, West. "Jews in the Roman Empire"
<https://westhunt.wordpress.com/2013/06/14/jews-in-the-roman-empire/> [accessed 12 Dec 2018]

Ignatius Catholic Study Bible: New Testament. Introduction and Commentary by Schott Hahn and Curtis Mitch. Catholic Edition. San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 2001.

Jerome Biblical Commentary. Edited by Raymond R. Brown et al. London: G. Chatman, 1989.

Johnson, Luke Timothy. *The Gospel of Luke*, Vol. 3, Sacra Pagina. Collegeville: Liturgical Press, 1991.

Jones, Peter. "Paul Confronts Paganism in the Church: A Case

Study of First Corinthians 15” In Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society. Louisville, Ky: Evangelical Theological Society, Dec. 2006.

Jonsson, David. *Islamic Economics and the Final Jihad*. Camarillo: California: Xulon Press, 2006.

Muhammad. *The Koran*. Translated with notes by N.J. Darwood. London: Penguin Books, 1990.

Kasemann, Ernst. “Essays on New Testament Themes.: Vol. 41. In *Studies in Biblical Theology*. Translated by W. J. Montague. London: SCM Press Ltd, 1964.

Keck, Leander E. *Paul and His Letters*. In *Proclamation Commentaries*, 2nd ed. Edited by Gerhard Krodel. Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1988.

Kruse , C. G., “Virtues and Vices.” In *Dictionary of Paul and his letters: a Compendium of Contemporary Biblical Scholarship*, ed. Gerald F. Hawthorne and Ralph P. Martin. Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press.

Laffan, Michael. “Religious Practices and Cultural Expressions.” *Islam in SouthEast Asia*.
<http://www.AsiaSociety.org>,
http://sites.asiasociety.org/education/islam_in_seasia/essays-religious.htm [accessed 0 4/09/18].

Lao Tzu. *Tao Te Chien* (London: Penguin classics, 1961).

Lawn, Chris. *Gadamer: a Guide for the Perplexed*. London: Continuum, 2006.

Levine, Lee I. *Judaism and Hellenism in Antiquity: Conflict or Confluence?* Peabody, Massachusetts: University, 1988.

Loader, William. *The New Testament with Imagination: a Fresh Approach to its Writings and Themes*. Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 2007.

Luz, Ulrich. *New Testament Theology: The Theology of the Gospel of Matthew*. Translated by Bradford Robinson. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993.

Mack, Burton L. and Vernon K. Robbins, editors. *Patterns of Persuasion in the Gospels*. Sonoma, California: Pleridge Press, 1989.

Marguerat, Daniel and Yvan Bourquin, *How to Read Bible Stories: An Introduction to Narrative Criticism*. London: SCM Press, 1999.

McLaren, James S. *Turbulent times?: Josephus and scholarship on Judaea in the first century CE*. Sheffield: Sheffield Academic Press, 1998.

Meeks, Wayne A. "A Nazi New Testament Professor Reads His Bible: The Strange Case of Gerhard Kittel." In *The Idea of Biblical Interpretation: Essays in Honor of James L. Kugel*. Edited by Hindy Najman and Judith H Newman. Leiden: Boston: Brill, 2004.

Meeks, Wayne. *The First Urban Christians*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1983.

Meier, John. *The Vision of Matthew: Christ, Church and Morality in the First Gospel*. New York: Paulist Press, 1979.

Mitchell, Margaret M. "1 and 2 Thessalonians." In *The Cambridge Companion to Paul*. Edited by James D. G. Dunn. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2003.

Moloney, Francis J. *A Body Broken for a Broken People: Eucharist in the New Testament*. Melbourne: Collins Dove, 1990.

_____. J. Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist. Peabody, Massachusetts, Hendrickson Publishers 2004.

Moss, Candida R. And Joel S. Baden. "1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 in Rabbinic Perspective." In *New Testament Studies*, 58. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2012,

Murphy O'Connor, J. *St Paul's Corinth*. Collegeville, Minn: Liturgical Press, c2002.

_____. *Keys to First Corinthians*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009.

_____. *Pneumatikoi*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, I:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199592104.003.0010, <http://www.oxfordscholarship.com/view/10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199592104.001.0001/acprof-9780199592104-chapter-10> [accessed 20 May 2016].

_____. *Paul: A Critical Life*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1996.

Nailon, Michelle. *Is There a Critique of Greek Philosophy in the Gospels/ Melbourne: Project Employment, 2016* <http://www.gospelofmark.org> {accessed October 2018}.

Neil Elliot and Mark Reasoner. editors. *Documents and Images for the Study of Paul*. Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 2011.

Neyrey, Jerome H. *Paul, in Other Words: A Cultural Reading of his Letters*. Louisville, KY: Westminster/John Knox 1990.

Orton, David. *The Understanding Scribe: Matthew and the Apocalyptic Ideal*. Sheffield, England: Sheffield Academic,

1989.

Padfield, David. "Corinth, Greece in the New Testament." Zion, Illinois: Church of Christ <http://www.padfield.com/2005/Corinth.html> [accessed 29th May 2016].

PBS "The Roman Empire in the First Century." Perrysburg, Oh: Public Broadcasting Service. <https://www.pbs.org/empires/romans/empire/emperors.html>, [accessed 22 Oct 2018].

Peake's Commentary on the Bible. Edited by Matthew Black and H. H. Rowley. London: Thomas Nelson and Sons Ltd, 1967.

Pervo, Richard I. Profit with Delight: the literary genre of the Acts of the Apostles. Philadelphia: Fortress Press, c1987.

Pontifical Biblical Commission. "On the Historical Truth of the Gospels." Appendix A In Christological Catechism: New Testament Answers. New York: Hamsey, N.J., Paulist, 1982.

_____. "The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church." Origins, Vol 23, n.29. Washington: C.N.S., 1994.

Powell, Mark Allan. What is Narrative Criticism? Minneapolis, MN: Fortress Press, 1990.

_____. What Are They Saying About Acts? New York: Paulist Press, 1991.

_____. What are They Saying About Luke? New York/ Mahwah: Paulist Press, 1990.

Rhoads, David, Joanna Dewey and Donald Michie. Mark as Story: An Introduction to the Narrative of a Gospel. 2nd ed.

Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1982.

Richard, Earl J. *The First and Second Thessalonians*. Vol 11, *Sacra Pagina*. Collegeville: The Liturgical Press, 1995.

Robbins, Vernon K. *Jesus the Teacher: A Socio-Rhetorical Interpretation of Mark*. Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1984.

_____. *The Tapestry of Early Christian discourse: Rhetoric, society and ideology*. London: Routledge, 1996.

- *The RSV Interlinear Greek-English New Testament*. Baskingstoke Hants: Marshall Pickering 1968.

Ruprecht, A. "Marriage and Divorce, Adultery and Incest." In *Dictionary of Paul and his letters: a Compendium of Contemporary Biblical Scholarship*, ed. Gerald F. Hawthorne and Ralph P. Martin. Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press.

Saldarini, Anthony. *Matthew's Christian-Jewish Community*. Chicago: Chicago University Press, 1994.

Schneiders, Sandra. *The Revelatory Text: Interpreting the New Testament as Sacred Scripture*. 2nd ed. Collegeville: A Michael Glazier Book, 1999.

Senior, Donald *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Mark*. Wilmington, Del.: Michael Glazier, c1985.

_____. *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Luke*. Wilmington, Delaware: Glazier, 1989.

_____. *What are they Saying about Matthew?* New York: Paulist Press, 1996.

Snodgrass, Klyne. "Matthew's Understanding of the Law." In *Interpretation: A Journal of Bible and Theology*, 96. Richmond Va.: Union theological Seminary, 1992.

Standhartinger, Angela. "Join in Imitating me. (Philippians 3:17: Towards an Interpretation of Philippians 3.)" In *New Testament Studies* 54. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008.

Stegner, William Richard. "The Temptation Narrative: A Study in the Use of Scripture by Early Jewish Christians." In *Biblical Research* 25 1990.

Talbert, Charles H. *Reading Corinthians: A Literary and Theological Commentary on 1 and 2 Corinthians*. New York: Crossroad, 1987.

Tannehill, Robert C. *The Narrative Unity of Luke-Acts: A Literary Interpretation, Vol 2 The Acts of the Apostles*. Minneapolis: Fortress Press, c1986-c1990.

The HarperCollins Bible Commentary . General Editor, James Mays. San Francisco: Harper and Rowe, 1988.

The Holy Bible: Old and New Testaments, RSV Catholic Edition. London: Nelson, 1966.

The Interpreter's One-Volume Commentary on the Bible. Edited by Charles M. Laymon. Nashville, Tennessee: Abingdon Press, 1971.

The Jerusalem Bible: New Testament. General Editor, Alexander Jones. London: Darton, Longman & Todd, 1967.

The RSV Interlinear Greek-English New Testament. Translated by Alfred Marshall. Oxford: Marshall Pickering, 1988.

Throckmorton, Burton H. Jr, *Gospel Parallels: A Synopsis of the First Three Gospels* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers,

1979), 21.

Thurston, Bonnie B. and Judith M. Ryan. *Philippians and Philemon*. Vol. 10 *Sacra Pagina*. Collegeville: Liturgical Press, 2005.

Tibbs, Clint. "The Spirit (World) and the (Holy) Spirits amongst the Earliest." In *The Catholic Biblical Quarterly*, 70 .Washington: Catholic Biblical Quarterly Association of America, April 2008.

Trainor, Michael F. *The Quest for Home: The Household in Mark's Community*. Collegeville, Minnesota: The Liturgical Press, 2001.

Ulrich, Daniel W. "The Missional Audience of the Gospel of Matthew" In *The Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 69. Washington DC: Catholic Biblical Association of America, 2007.

Vlach, Michael. "Plato's Theory of Forms." In *Theological Studies* (<http://www.theologicalstudies.org/resource-library/philosophy-dictionary/158-platos-theory-of-forms>) [accessed 28th May 2016].

Walker, William O Jr., "1 Corinthians 15:29-34 as a Non-Pauline Interpolation," In *The Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 69. Washington: Catholic Biblical Quarterly Association of America, Jan. 2007.

Wanamaker, Charles A. "A Rhetoric of Power: Ideology and 1 Corinthians 1-4." In *Paul and the Corinthians: Studies on a Community in Conflict*. Essays in Honour of Margaret Thrall editors, Todd D. Still and David G. Horrell. Boston: Brill, 2003.

Wilken, Robert L. "The Bible and Its Interpreters: Christian Biblical Interpretation," In *Harper's Bible Commentary*.

Edited by James L. Mays et al. San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1988.

Wilson, Ralph F. "The Command and Blessing of Holy Sex (1 Thessalonians 4:1-12. j)." In 1 & 2 Thessalonians Discipleship Lessons. Loumis, CA: JesusWalk Publications (http://www.jesuswalk.com/thessalonians/04_sex.htm) [accessed 1 April 2014].

Witherington, Ben. "Paul the Letter Writer." In *New Testament Rhetoric: An Introductory Guide to the art and persuasion in and of the New Testament*. Eugene, Oregon: Cascade Books, c. 2009).

Zaehner, R.C. *The Bhagavad Gita: with a commentary based on the original sources*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1969.



Is Christian Morality Unique?

Part 2

Michelle Nailon CSB

*Time and Place World Views
in Tension*



Is Christian Morality Unique?

Part 2

Time and Place World Views in Tension

Michelle Nailon CSB

B.Arts, B.Theol., M.Theol., GradDipTheol

Project Employment Inc
Melbourne 2020

All Rights Reserved

ISBN 978-0-9805603-4-3

Nihil Obstat: *Rev Dr Cameron Forbes STD*
Diocesan Censor

Imprimatur: *Very Reverend Joseph Caddy*
AM Lic.Soc.Sci VG
Vicar General
Archdiocese of Melbourne

Date: *11 February*

The Nihil Obstat and Imprimatur are official declarations that a book or pamphlet is free of doctrinal or moral error. No implication is contained therein that those who have granted the Nihil Obstat and Imprimatur agree with the contents, opinions or statements expressed. They do not necessarily signify that the work is approved as a basic text for catechetical instruction

Abstract of Parts 1 and 2

Part 1 of *Is Christianity Unique* uses historical critical exegesis to show that the theme of “money, power and sex” pervades the writings of Paul and the Gospels. This theme is based on the commandments of “Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal”.

Part 2 uses a sociological approach to do a semiotic analysis of the gospels. It shows that Christian society is based on a hybrid of Judaic (cf. time) and Hellenistic (cf. place) world views. Tension between these two world views generates a unique energy. This energy fashions a Christian morality approach to “money, power and relationship” that idealises the commandments. It provides a base and also agenda for industry.



CONTENTS

Is Christian Morality Unique? Part Two

Chapter One

Towards a solution to the Question

	Page
A	
Re-Cap Of Part One	1
(a)	1
The problem of Interpretation	
(b)	4
Paul's Writings Preceded the Gospels	
(c)	5
A re-vamped focus on money, power and relationship, in the writings of Paul	
B	
The Sociological Base Of Christianity	6
(a)	6
The New Testament Writers	
(b)	9
A problem with sociological research in its overlap with the human sciences	
(c)	13
Proposal to use semiotic analysis in a sociological analysis of the Gospels	
(d)	15
Semiotic Analysis also follows a “science”	

C	The Synoptic Gospels (Including Acts)	16
(a)	Gospel of Mark	16
	“Recognise Law and Order” Was Mark a sociologist?	
(i)	Historical Position of Mark	16
(ii)	Semiotic Analysis and the “Grammar” of Mark’s text	19
(iii)	The Analysis	23
	A What Authority is Based Upon	23
	B Order Needs a Sense of Direction	27
	C A Golden Rule is the Way of the Child	30
	D The Power of One Depends upon Coping	32
	A Summing up of Mark as an introduction to the Gospels	37
(b)	Gospel of Matthew	39
	“Internalise the Law” Was Matthew a Sociologist?	
	A Infancy Narrative	44
	B Push Beyond the Bare Outlines	44
	C Acquire Attributes to Internalise Law	45
	D Develop an Environment of Internalised Law	46

E	Avoid Over-stress on Law Externals	48
F	Lead Through a Forgiving Relationship	49
(c)	Gospel of Luke	53
	“Give Direction to Order” Was Luke a Sociologist?	
A	Infancy Narrative	55
B	Acquire Qualities for Ordered Community	55
C	Improve on Democracy	61
D	Avoid Over-stress on Idealism	65
E	Act with Direction like Kingdom Figure	67
F	Let Forgiveness Prevail over Narrowness and the Loud Voice	69
(d)	Luke’s Acts of the Apostles	73
	“Launch the Society”	
A	Intro to Identity and Re-tracing of Steps	73
B	Recognise Outside Autonomy	76
C	Cope with Opposition to Outside Reach	78
	Council of Jerusalem – a “pivot” in the story and A Formula for Christian Morality	79 84
D	Heed Multiple voices and the Living Word	85

E	Recognise Authority in the Range of Figures	86
F	Challenge the Power Base of the World	91
D	Inferred References to the Hybrid Nature of Christianity	92

Chapter Two

The Credibility Factor

A	The Contradictory Position of Current New Testament Scholarship	94
	A Blanket of Disinterest	100
B	Gadamer's Critique of Historical Critical Exegesis	103
	(i) Gadamer's historical background in Nazi Germany	103
	(ii) An underlying critique of Historical Critical Exegesis	105
	(iii) <i>Truth and Method</i> compared with the themes of time and place in Matthew and Luke	106

C	A Simplified Precis of Gadamer's <i>Truth and Method</i>	113
	Part One (of <i>Truth and Method</i>)	113
	Truth as it emerges in the experience of Art	
	Section 1:	113
	The Importance of Traditional Culture	113
	Kant (1774-1804) and the Enlightenment	114
	The Demotion of Allegory	116
	Relevance of Section 1 to a critique of Historical Critical Exegesis	121
	Section 2:	122
	The Subjectivity of Play and Art	
	Relevance of Section 2 to a critique of Historical Critical Exegesis	125
	Part Two (of <i>Truth and Method</i>)	126
	Understanding in the Human Sciences	
	Section 3:	126
	Understanding Within a Living Tradition	126
	Heidegger and <i>Dasein</i> – “being is time”	129
	Relevance of Section 3 to a critique of Historical Critical Exegesis	131

Section 4:	132
Understanding in terms of fore-structure	132
The Problem of Application	135
The Hermeneutic Relevance of Aristotle	136
The Significance of Legal Hermeneutics	137
The Importance of Experience in Understanding	140
Plato's dialectic and the importance of question	141
Relevance of Section 4 to a critique of Historical Critical Exegesis	
Part Three (<i>Of Truth and Method</i>)	143
Hermeneutics Being Guided by Language	
Section 5:	143
Language and Hermeneutics (i.e. understanding)	143
Language and the Logos	144
Language and the Word	146
Language and concept formation	147
Language as the horizon of understanding	148
Language as medium and its speculative structure	149
The Universal Aspect of Hermeneutics	150
Relevance of Section 5 to a critique of Historical Critical Exegesis	151

Chapter Three

Towards A Solution With John's Gospel

A	Introduction:	152
	Inadequacy of the “solution” so far	152
	How can a Christian community stay united?	154
	Jesus Christ: the Living Authority and Living Word	155
	Some Comments on the “Grammar” of semiotic analysis in John	156
B	The Gospel of John:	159
	“Pass on the Power of One”	159
A	Intro to the Authorised, Living Word	159
B	Heed Characteristics of Live Authority	159
C	Heed Characteristics of the Living Word	164
	A following of Jesus Offers More	168
D	Challenge to Identify with the Authorised, Living Word	172
E	Allow the Authorised Living Word to Set Direction	174
F	Epilogue	175
	An Overall Water Image in John's gospel and its Summary Implication	175
C	A Summing up so far of Parts 1 and 2 of <i>Is Christian Morality Unique?</i>	178

Chapter Four

Implications

A	Implications of the Findings of this Research Project	181
1.	Clarification of the discipline of Scripture Interpretation	181
2.	Understanding the History of Christianity	183
3.	Understanding the Catholic Church before and after Vatican II	186
4.	“Respect for the Body of Christ” as practised in the Eucharist	188
5.	Understanding Gospel Values	193
6.	The Roles of Time and Place	194
B	Inadequacies of this Research Project	195
1.	Co’existence of approaches to New Testament Studies	196
2.	What happened to religious Orders after Vatican II?	196
3.	Can Church Law be enforced?	197
4.	What is the role of the Eucharist?	198
5.	How does the “disciple” figure fit with the “Kingdom Figure”?	198
6.	How does present Western society fit with the sociology of the gospels?	200
	Bibliography for Part Two	201

CHAPTER ONE

TOWARDS A SOLUTION TO THE QUESTION

A RE-CAP OF PART ONE

A Focus on Money, Power and Relationship

(a) The problem of interpretation

Is Christian Morality Unique? Part Two continues on from the line of argumentation developed in *Part One*. This opened with the premise that an understanding of the uniqueness of Christian morality, needs to begin with an exploration of morality as expressed in its most basic texts, that is, the gospels. However from the beginning of Part 1 the question of interpretation has arisen. What would be the most authentic approach to take in looking at gospel morality? On-going reference has been made to the 1993 document put out by the Catholic Pontifical Biblical Commission “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church”.¹ This document concedes the most dominant method of interpreting Scripture is in the “Historical Critical Exegesis” method of interpretation. The Commission says “The historical-critical method is the indispensable method for the scientific study of the meaning of ancient texts.”² However, the Commission also concedes that this approach is “diachronic”, meaning it only looks at one small section of the text at a time. The Commission admits there is need for the development of

¹ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church,” In *Origins*, Vol 23, n. 29 (Washington: C. N. S., 1994), 500.

² Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation ..”, 500.

“synchronic” approaches to interpretation in order to complement the now established and dominant diachronic approach. It describes some synchronic approaches including rhetorical, narrative and semiotic (cf. structural) analysis. It also recommends that such approaches to interpretation be taken in order to take advantage of human sciences such as sociology, anthropology, psychology and psychoanalysis.³

Part One of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* points out, that despite the Commission’s endorsement of synchronic interpretation of Scriptural texts there are points of conflict between the approaches. Thus some synchronic approaches even appear to conflict with other synchronic approaches. A case in point here is semiotic analysis and its exploration of “concentric circles” within the text. With such analysis, paragraphing for instance can appear to run “backwards” and therefore conflict with the linear approach of narrative criticism.

Part One of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* weighs up some further difficulties connected with the use of semiotic analysis in interpreting Scripture. It considers the apparently low opinion of this approach and this appears to be displayed by Joseph Fitzmyer, who was a major proponent of historical critical exegesis. Fitzmyer gives a critique (also explored in Part 1) of the Commission’s statement “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church”. In a note connected to the subject of semiotic analysis, he talks about “pulling a rabbit out of a hat”.⁴ Such an simile reflects a lack of credibility in semiotic analysis both on his part and possibly if not probably amongst scriptural scholars in general. The discipline and exactness of historical critical exegesis, does not sit easily with the general

³ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation ...”, 502.

⁴ cf.. Joseph A Fitzmyer, *The Biblical Commission’s Document “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church: text and commentary,”* (Roma: Editrice Pontificio Istituto Biblico, 1995).

“sweep” of a synchronic approach, especially semiotic analysis.

After weighing up the range of interpretations, including contextual approaches and fundamentalism, the Commission says later on in its document, “Exegetes may have a distinctive role in the interpretation of the Bible but they do not exercise a monopoly.”⁵ Unfortunately, one could say that given the apparent disparity between diachronic and synchronic approaches one is tempted to think such a statement by the Commission is one of wishful thinking rather than fact!

Partly because of the credibility factor relating to semiotic, structural analysis, Part One’s exploration as to whether or not Christian morality is unique, avoids the use of semiotic analysis altogether. Instead, use is made of historical critical exegesis itself in order to try and sort out what are the “key” foci of Christian morality. At the same time in some instances both narrative and rhetorical approaches to interpretation are also used.

In the contents of Part One, there is firstly an examination of Paul’s presentation of morality followed by an exploration of the morality presented in the synoptic gospels (including the Acts of the Apostles). The reason for this sequence is that Paul’s writings preceded those of the gospels and Paul’s theology was basic to gospel-writing. For instance “Paul’s problem with the law lies in its incapacity to address human sinfulness at sufficiently radical depth.”⁶ The gospels pick up on this.

⁵ cf. Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation ...”, 520.

⁶ Brendan Byrne, *Galatians and Romans* (Collegeville: The Liturgical Press, 2012), 181.

(b) Paul's writings which preceded the gospels

Despite the fact that Paul's life and mission were a following on from the Apostles and about twenty years after the events described in the gospels, his mission and writings went before the writing of the gospels, again by about twenty years. Paul set out to provide a cosmological, theological and morality "map" for the Christian theologians who would come after him.⁷ This "map" provided a basis for the writing of the gospels.

Take a closer look at the overall time framework involved here. Gospel events took place in the 30's CE. Paul was writing in the 50's CE.⁸ Scholars believe the first gospel written by Mark was about 70 CE when Jerusalem and its Temple were being destroyed.⁹ Scholars consider that Matthew and Luke wrote in about 85 CE.¹⁰ John's gospel was about twenty years later still.¹¹

For Matthew, the 80's CE was around the time that Christian Jews were being excluded from the local synagogue via a curse to be recited in the Synagogue against Christians. This "curse" was put out by the leaders in mainstream Judaism in an edict from Jamnia.¹² For Luke on the other hand, in 85 CE he was in a community where the dominant membership now

⁷ cf. Murphy O'Connor, *St Paul's Corinth* (Collegeville, Minn: Liturgical Press, c.2002) 156-7.

⁸ B. Ehrman, "Paul as Pastor," in *Yale Bible Studies Series* (New Haven, USA: Yale University) https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pMVatCd_1xM [accessed march 2016].

⁹ Daniel J. Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, (Collegeville, Minn. Liturgical Press, c. 1991), 15.

¹⁰ Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 22.

¹¹ Scott Huhn and Curtis Mitch, Intro. Cm. Notes, *The Ignatius Catholic Study Bible: The New Testament*, Revised Standard Version, 2nd Catholic Edition (San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 2001), 157.

¹² Michael Wilcockson, *A Student's Guide to AS Religious Studies* (Rhinegold Publishing Limited, 2003), 101.

consisted almost entirely of people from a Gentile rather than a Jewish background.¹³ A major question being faced by Luke and his community was whether or not the Church could continue on in its existence and mission with a congregation that was based from a pagan culture. John had a different task again. He was trying to meld together people from the two quite different backgrounds of Judaism and Hellenism.

(c) A “re-vamped” focus on money, power and relationship, beginning with Paul

In Part One of *Is Christian Morality Unique*, it was demonstrated that a key concern of Paul and the synoptic gospel writers after him was related to “money, power and sex”. It was claimed that this concern parallels the fifth, sixth and seventh commandments of “Thou shalt not kill (cf. power), Thou shalt not commit adultery (cf. sex) and Thou shalt not steal (cf. money) (cf. Exodus 34).

It was shown in Part 1 how these concerns undergird the presentation of the teachings of Jesus in the gospels of Mark, Matthew and Luke and in the story of his life. A particular study was made of the passion narratives in the synoptic gospels. It was shown how Mark puts special emphasis on the deprivation of material wealth (cf. money). Matthew puts special emphasis on the testing of trust (cf. relationship). Luke puts an emphasis on self-determination (cf. power). Thus it was demonstrated that the emphasis on money, power and relationship are distinctive features of the Christian approach to morality. But a question still remained. Are these emphases unique to Christianity?

¹³ Ulrich Luz, *New Testament Theology*, J. Bradford Robinson, trans.(Cambridge:Cambridge University Press, 1993), 144.

A brief comparison was then made with other world religions, namely Judaism, Islam, Taoism, Hinduism and Buddhism. It was pointed out that in these religions also, there is a particular interest in the morality relating to money power and sex. Also, like Christianity, these world religions encourage in varying degrees a “raising of the bar” in the observance of edicts relating to money, power and sex. So the exploration of *Is Christian Morality Unique? Part One* finishes with the comment that perhaps Christian morality is not so unique after all.

However a question is then raised as to whether or not it is the social framework that Christianity is based upon, that distinguishes its uniqueness. In such case it is the social background of Christianity that forces its practice of morality to take on a unique approach. .

B THE SOCIOLOGICAL BASE OF CHRISTIANITY

(a) The New Testament Writers

Throughout Part One, despite the negative comments made here about the dominant method of interpretation (historical critical exegesis), it was this diachronic method that was used in the exploration of morality in Paul and the three synoptic gospels. As a re-cap of this method. “Historical” looks at the historical situation at the time of both the gospel story itself and the background of when the stories were written. Then “critical” looks at the meaning of the language being used. “Exegesis” takes one small section of text at a time.

The question about whether or not the “uniqueness” of Christian morality rests in its sociological background leads to further questioning. For instance:

- “What is this sociological background of Christianity?”
- “Do the frameworks of the gospels indicate such a sociological background?”
- “How does the sociological background force Christians to take a unique approach to their practice of morality and what does this look like?”

If we go back to Paul, we find there is an underlying theme both in his writings and in the writing of those who wrote immediately and twenty plus years after him. This concerns the unification of Jews and Gentiles into one people cf. “For Christ himself has brought us peace, by making the Jews and Gentiles one people.” (Eph. 2:13).

Paul’s belief in the possibility of a unity between Jews and Gentiles, as with all his theology, stems from the overpowering experience that he had at the time of his conversion as described in Acts 22:8.¹⁴ Here, Jesus Christ appeared to Saul (to be renamed Paul) in the form of a blinding light. A voice called out,

Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me? Saul replied, “Who are you Lord? The answer came “I am Jesus the Nazarene whom you are persecuting (Acts 22:8).

Paul’s encounter with the risen Christ, revealed there is a corporate, organic link between the followers of Jesus and the person of Jesus himself. Paul realised that a new “corporate” life had emerged from such an organic unity. He realised that

¹⁴ F.F. Bruce, “The Epistles of Paul” *Peake’s Commentary on the Bible*, ed. Matthew Black (London: T. Nelson 1962), 929.

the followers of Jesus Christ have been enabled to share in the resurrected life of Christ (cf. 1 Corinthians 15).

From the time of this visitation on, Paul faced the challenge of bringing together the two different types of society of Judaism and Hellenism into the one hybrid community. On the one hand there was the Judaism of Paul's heritage and he was a Pharisee within it. On the other hand there was Hellenism, the culture of the Greco Roman Empire. Paul was a Roman citizen.

Paul was familiar with both societies. However he also realised there were two quite different world views involved here. Judaism puts a heavy emphasis on law and the sense of history and time. The Hellenism of the Greco Roman Empire put a heavy emphasis on order and the imposition of order over a vast area of space. Thus, in the world of the first century CE, Greco-Roman architecture, systems of government and even the straightness of the road systems all reflected a Hellenistic focus on order. An outcome of this for instance would have been that in the world of Paul's day, when the Roman Empire so strong, it would have been safer for someone like himself to travel around than it would have been in centuries to follow.

The question faced by Paul about the unity between the Jewish and Gentile followers of Jesus, was also faced by the gospel writers. Thus on one level the gospels dealt with the story of Jesus amongst the Jewish people of Palestine in the 30's CE. But on another level, the background of the historical situation of the gospel writers was also being reflected. For instance, as the years progressed more Gentile people were joining the church. The church was spreading out into the Roman Empire. Mark, writing at the time of the destruction of Jerusalem would want to show that the followers of Jesus were not in open conflict with Rome. Matthew, writing in a community now rejected by Judaism would want to assert the validity of its claim to a Jewish heritage. Luke, writing from within a

Gentile neighbourhood would want to show that the power of God was still operating from within the community. Later still, as mentioned above, John was concerned about the unity between people from both differing backgrounds. Those of a Jewish background needed to accept Jesus more fully.

All these background concerns influence the shape of each gospel and the interpretation each gospel presents of the life of Jesus.

(b) A problem with sociological research in its overlap with Human Sciences

If the social background of Christianity as reflected in the gospels, is to be explored more fully then logically, a sociological method of interpreting the gospels would need to be used. However, the discipline of sociology is a “human science”. It is more abstract and generalised than the “natural sciences” of mathematics or for that matter of historical critical exegesis. Thus a sociological approach to interpretation is not likely to sit easily with historical critical exegesis which is described by the Biblical Commission as both the dominant and the scientific method of interpretation. ¹⁵

This difference in approach and acceptability is likely to detract from the status and credibility of a sociological approach to interpretation. Thus, despite the encouragement given to the latter by the Catholic Pontifical Commission, the abstract elements of sociology would be yet one more reason why people would (and do) downplay the importance of sociological findings.

¹⁵ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation ...”, 500.

Perhaps a descriptive definition of sociology would be of some help here. It can shed light on frameworks and difficulties faced by those trying to do a sociological investigation into a particular society. In the case at hand here, the investigation is into a society consisting of the elements of both Judaism and Hellenism.

Eight Essential Characteristics of Sociology **Bharat Kumar ..**

1. Sociology has its own field of study, boundary and method. It is **not treated and studied as a branch of any other science** like philosophy or political philosophy or history.
2. Sociology concentrates its attention on man, his social behaviour, social activities and social life. The fact that sociology **deals with the social universe** distinguishes it from astronomy, physics, chemistry, zoology, mathematics and other physical sciences.
3. **Sociology is a categorical and not a normative discipline: Sociology confines itself to statements about what is.** not what should be or ought to be"..... it cannot deal with problems of good and evil,....It cannot decide the directions in which sociology ought to go.
4. Sociology as a pure science has its applied fields such as administration, diplomacy, social work, etc. .. the immediate aim of sociology is the **acquisition of knowledge about human society**, not the utilization of that knowledge.
5. Sociology is more concerned with the form of human

events and their patterns. Sociology is an abstract and not a concrete science. ...This does not mean that sociology is an art and not a science.For example, sociology is not concerned with particular wars and revolutions but with war and. revolution in general, as **social phenomena as type's social conflict.**

6. Sociology **tries to find out the general laws or principles about human interaction and association** ... about the nature, form, content and structure of human groups and societies. ... It tries to make generalizations on the basis of the study of some selected events....For example, a sociologist makes generalizations about the nature of secondary groups... by **observing and studying a few.**

7. Sociology.....The area of inquiry of sociology is general and not specialized..... It is concerned with human interaction and human life in general..... . It only studies **human activities in a general way**.....This does not, however, mean that sociology is the basic social science nor does it mean it is the general social science.

8. Sociology is **both a rational and an empirical science:**There are two broad ways of approach to scientific knowledge. One known as empiricism, which is the approach that emphasizes experience and the facts that result from observation and experimentation. The other is known as rationalism, reason and the theories that result from logical inference.

The empiricist collects facts, the rationalist co-ordinates and arranges them.¹⁶

It is proposed in the pages to follow to make a comparison between the above description of sociology and the approach that was taken by the gospel writers. Weight will be given to the fact that as they were writing, these people were also involved in an interpretation of the life and meaning of Jesus Christ. It will be argued here, that amongst the many dimensions of their interpretations, they were also taking a sociological approach.

Does this claim that the gospel writers were “sociologists” fit with the 1993 statement of the Pontifical Commission? In its description of semiotic analysis, the Commission talks about the possibility of the overall content of a text being analysed at three different levels. These levels are the narrative level, the level of discourse and the logico-semantic level. In an explanation of the logico-semantic level, it says:

This is the so-called deep level. It is also the most abstract. It proceeds from the assumption that certain forms of logic and meaning underlie the narrative and discursive organisation of all discourse. The analysis at this level consists in identifying the logic which governs the basic articulations of the narrative and figurative flow of a text.¹⁷

Compare this statement of the Commission, with the summary statement above about sociology, “The empiricist collects facts, the rationalist co-ordinates and arranges them.” It is to be argued here in Part 2 of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* that the approach of semiotic analysis can demonstrate how the

¹⁶ Bahart Kumar, “8 essential characteristics of sociology” <http://www.preservearticles.com/sociology/8-essential-characteristics-of-sociology/2509> (www.preservearticles.com.) [accessed 1 August 2019].

¹⁷ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation....”,504.

gospel writers were collecting facts about the societies of the first century CE. They were arranging these in order to “do” a sociological analysis of the emerging church. Thus in the “the basic articulations of the narrative and figurative flow of a text”, the writers were defining and demonstrating the nature of a social organism that consists of the elements of both Judaic and Hellenistic societies. The “underlying logic” of the gospels therefore describes a hybrid of two different types of societies - societies that are based on two different world views.

A Semiotic analysis of the gospels also shows the awareness that the gospel writers had, that these two differing world views were based on the two differing emphases on time and place.

(c) Proposal to use semiotic analysis in a sociological analysis

The quote below provides further details about semiotic analysis. This also comes from the description of the Pontifical Commission which in turn has based its description on that of Algirdas J. Greimas.¹⁸ The Commission says:

Semiotics is based upon three main principles.

- The principle of immanence: Each text forms a unit of meaning complete in itself; the analysis considers the entire text but only the text; it does not look to any date “external” to the text such as the author, the audience, any events it describes or what might have been its process of composition.

¹⁸ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation...”, 504.

- The principle of the structure of meaning: There is no meaning given except in and through relationship, in particular the relationship of “difference”; the analysis of the text consists then in establishing the network of relationships (of opposition, confirmation, etc.), between the various elements; out of this the meaning of the text is constructed.
- - The principle of the grammar of the text; Each text follows a ‘grammar,’ that is to say, a certain number of rules or structures;.... in the collection of sentences that we call discourse there are various levels, each of which has its own distinct grammar.
- (note also the narrative, discourse and the logico-semantic levels referred to above.)¹⁹
-

Further points made by the Commission include “.. each biblical text is a coherent whole, obedient to a precise linguist mechanic of operation...” Also it points out “The semiotic approach must be open to history: first of all to the history of those who play a part in the texts; then to that of the authors and readers.”²⁰

A final point made by the Commission about semiotic analysis has special relevance to those who have limited knowledge of the gospels to start with.

When it does not become lost in remote and complex language and when its principal elements are taught in simple terms, semiotic analysis can give Christians a taste for studying the biblical text and discovering certain of its dimensions, without their first having to acquire a great deal

¹⁹ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation ...”, 504.

²⁰ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation ...”, 504.

of instruction in historical matters relating to the production of the text and its socio-cultural world.²¹

(d) Semiotic analysis also follows a “science”

In the context of an ongoing discussion in these pages about the credibility of semiotic analysis as compared with Historical Critical Exegesis, a point made by the Commission above has special relevance. It says “Each text follows a ‘grammar,’ that is to say, a certain number of rules or structures; in the collection of sentences.” This implies the task of the semiotic analysts would be to search out and observe the rules of such a “grammar” in their analysis of the text. In this sense then semiotic analysts would be objectively following a scientific type of discipline dictated by the text rather than “pulling a rabbit out of a hat” as implied by Fitzmyer in his notes about the “semiotic” approach.²² However this “grammar” would fit with the “science” of “human sciences” rather than the “natural sciences”.



²¹ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation ...”, 504.

²² Cf. Joseph A Fitzmyer, *The Biblical Commission’s Document “The Interpretation ...”*,

C THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS (INCLUDING ACTS)

(a) Gospel of Mark

(i) Historical Position of Mark

In order to do a semiotic analysis of Mark's gospel which was the first gospel written, it is appropriate (cf. the warning by the Commission) to briefly consider Mark's historical position. There are a number of references to a "Mark" in the New Testament. Probably it could never be proved whether or not these were references to the one, single person or that they referred to the Mark who, according to tradition, finally pulled together the gospel that now carries his name. However the early Church must have seen similarities between such a person (or persons) and the final writer of the first gospel.

The Mark referred to in Acts 12:12 was apparently a young man at the time of the crucifixion. How so? In the months following the crucifixion of Jesus, Herod thought it would please the Jews to execute the key followers of Jesus. Therefore, according to Acts the apostle James was executed (Acts 12:2). Then Herod arrested Peter with the same intention (Acts 12:5). However in Peter's case an angel of the Lord set him free. Peter then went to the house of Mark's mother where the disciples were assembled (Acts 12:8). It also appears that in the years to follow, Mark retained a strong link with Peter who in 1 Peter 5:13 referred to him as "my son Mark".

Someone called Mark also had links with Paul. In Acts we are told Mark started out as a companion in Paul's mission. But for some reason (possibly fear) he backed out. Later on when

he wanted to accompany Paul and Barnabas on their mission Paul refused to take him. Paul and Barnabas had a major split about this (Acts 15:38). The result was that Barnabas took Mark who was his cousin (Col. 4:10), as his missionary companion. Paul took Silas. (Acts 15:40). Yet apparently the rift between Mark and Paul was eventually healed. Mark reappears in a letter written by Paul later on and he says that he finds Mark very helpful in his work (2 Tim. 4:1-8).

There is a bottom line to these references to Mark that has some relevance to the gospel that was written in his name; In Galatians 2:8 Paul says how he and Peter had agreed that he, Paul, would go on mission to the Gentiles while Peter's mission would be to the Jews. In the time that followed, missionary activity apparently panned out in this way. But apparently in Paul's view the divergence went too far. In Galatians he reprimands Peter for identifying too much with customs of the Jews, because Peter and even Barnabas had began eating apart from the Gentile converts (Gal. 2:11-13).

However overall, the figure of Mark was associated with both Peter and his Jewish roots and mission. And, at the same time he was associated with Paul whose missionary outreach was to the Gentiles. Thus "Mark", would have imbibed an understanding of how the message of Jesus fitted into both a Jewish context and also the Hellenistic context of the Gentiles.

This sort of referencing in the New Testament (and possibly the historical background) fitted out someone called "Mark" for the writing of the first gospel in about 70 CE. This was a time when clarification of the nature of the emerging church was urgently needed.²³

²³ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist* (Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson Publishers, c.2004), ix.

In 70 CE, some decades had passed since the life and teaching of Jesus in the 30's. During the intervening decades, stories about the life of Jesus would have been told and retold. Given the general illiteracy situation of people at the time, it is likely these stories were collected and structured in a way to enable “performers” to retell them. The use of inverted circles for instance (cf. ABCDEDCBA) helped with memorisation. This approach to story-telling was to be found in the Jewish literature of the time. A quote by Daniel Beaulieu about devices used in Hebrew poetry is relevant here.

Parallelism is not merely a stylistic device of formularistic syntactical duplication. It is intended to achieve a result reminiscent of binocular vision, the super imposition of two syntactical images in order to endow them with solidity and depth.²⁴

This structure was also a feature of Homer the favourite Greek author of the time as noted by Cicero “I’ll be like Homer and put the cart before the horse.”²⁵

In the decades after the life and death of Jesus one can imagine a small group of people assembled together at night and/or involved in a manual task during the day. Stories about the life of Jesus would be re-told in clusters. At the same time the storytellers, even before the time of Mark’s gospel, would have been mindful of Paul’s aim “to weld the Jews and Gentiles one people”.

²⁴ Note: Cf. Daniel Beaulieu “5 Literary Devices in Hebrew Poetry” (Prezi.com, May 2014) <https://prezi.com/w4p3o7zrx8e/5-literary-devices-in-hebrew-poetry/>

²⁵ Cicero, *Letters to Atticus* ed. T. Page and W. Rouse, Trans. B. Winstedt (London: William Heineman, 1919) Note: also can be found at http://archive.org/stream/letterstoatticus01ciceuoft/letterstoatticus01ciceuoft_djvu.txt.

At the time of 70 CE first hand witnesses of the events in the life of Jesus were dying out. The Roman army was in the process of wiping out Jerusalem and its temple which had been the keystone of Judaism. At the time, the followers of Jesus were generally thought to comprise a small and strange “sect” within Judaism. Indeed they are described as such in Acts 24:5 and Paul is supposed to be a “ringleader” of them. In the 60’s CE Christians were living on the outskirts of Rome when a huge fire broke out there in 65 CE. Because they were not affected by the fire it was easy for the Emperor Nero to direct blame away from himself and foist blame upon them instead. This meant that when Mark was writing, the followers of Jesus had already faced harsh persecution. They had already faced betrayal within their own ranks.

Such persecution was yet another reason why around 70 CE it was time to clarify where Christians stood in relation to both the Jews and the Roman Empire? A more formalised statement by the community was needed. People were already familiar with the constitutions of various types of societies. Aristotle for instance had made a collection of over a hundred largely city-state constitutions.²⁶ As far as the followers of Jesus were concerned, they also needed a definitive type of statement about who they were. Hence the gospel of Mark.

(ii) Semiotic Analysis and the “Grammar” of Mark’s text

If, as the early Church understood, their community was based on elements of the societies of both Judaism and Hellenism, it was logical to ask in turn what were these societies based upon?

²⁶ Aristotle, *Politics and Athenian Constitution*, edited and translated by John Warrington (London, J.M.Dent, E.P. Dutton, 1959).

A possible “structure” for a gospel could fall into four sections. In fact it is possible that clusters of stories about Jesus that were already being retold in this format over the decades after the 30’s CE, and they fell into sections before the gospels had been written. Four possible Sections for Mark could be as follows:

- a. If Judaism could be understood as being based upon Law (-the law of God), then a question to be dealt with is “What would the authority of law be based upon?”.
- b. If Hellenism (the Greek culture of the Roman Empire) could be understood as being based upon Order then, “What would be needed to prevent “order” from imploding into chaos?”
- c. A question to be dealt with here would be “Is there some sort of “personality type” that would enable people to move backwards and forwards between the two types of societies?”
- d. What are the social pressures people need to deal with in responding to and following this more fluid personality type?

It is proposed in the following paragraphs to use semiotic analysis to sort out whether or not Mark did structure his text at a logico-semantic level in order to deal with these questions. If so, how did he do it? What sort of “grammar” did he use?

In the context of literary devices that were used in the first century CE, one could expect that chiasmus that is, inverted circle constructions, could be part of the writer’s “grammar”. Also as noted and in the context of the times, it was likely

Mark would want to show that “the way” of Jesus was not a threat to the Roman Empire. Even in Judaism people were aware of Homer, Hellenism’s favourite author. Homer shows how the hero sets out and goes from place to place. The urns of C8th BCE show Homer’s hero doing this.²⁷ In the case of the stories of Homer in each place where the hero goes, there was some sort of adventure. In the case of Mark’s gospel writing he could take a similar approach. He could use places to delineate the range of stories about his hero, Jesus Christ. At the same time, at a logico-semantic level Mark could be putting forward a definition about the basis of a society that is based upon law (cf. Judaism). Then in the next Section he could show the basis for a society based upon order (cf. Hellenism).

What are further details about the “grammar” Mark could be using? Consider a proposed first Section.

- He could construct a paragraph “chiasmus” (that is paragraphs that form an inverted circle). When showing Jesus going from place to place, Mark could at the same time, be matching up the places mentioned. These places in common could also be acting as paragraph “hooks”. They could “pair up” the paragraphs they pull together into a chiasmus formation. At the same time Mark could be matching up a first and second paragraph in order to make a key point in common. When all these points in common are added up they comprise a list of the characteristics that define what authority (and law) is based upon.

²⁷ Darrell L. Bock, "The Son of Man in Luke 5:24," *Bulletin for Biblical Research* 1 (Winona Lake, in: Eisenbrauns, 1991),109-121.

- A paragraph “hook” that names a place such as the sea, a boat, a house, a mountain etc. would need to match up in a credible way with the place named in its pair, so that this also would refer to the sea, a boat, a house a mountain etc.
- There could only be one such “hook” (or place) per paragraph.
- The “hook” would need to belong to the paragraph, that is, it would need to form an essential part of it. An advantage in this of course would be that it could not be easily deleted or changed in the course of a re-telling (or copying) of the stories.
- Further parallels between the paragraph pairs could reinforce the key points that they had in common.
- The summary would need to fit with the underlying line of logic of the gospel and indeed all the other gospels as well.
- The whole text of the gospel should be able to fit into structures that accord with the underlying “grammar”.
- Some sections of the text could “deviate” from the grammar that applies to the rest of the text. But in such case these Section(s) would have their own “grammar” and still retain a purpose that fitted with the whole.

Can such a “grammar” be found in the text of Mark’s gospel?
Or is one tempted to state with others “I can’t make head or
tail of this?”

(iii) The Analysis

(a) Mark’s Section A What Authority is Based Upon Was Mark a Sociologist?

With the above introduction, consider a list of places where Jesus went in a first section of Mark’s gospel> This stretches from Mk 1:9 to Mk 3:35. Each of the places introduces a paragraph. There are seventeen of these. It is being argued here that they form eight paragraph pairs in the formation of a concentric circle. The middle paragraph forms a centrepiece which makes a key point about all the others. The formation of this concentric circle and the points made by the paragraphs, allow the points to be presented in a three-dimensional way. Once again one is reminded of the “binocular” vision that is a result of such repetition. In such a view the first, last and middle points are given extra emphasis because of their location in relation to the whole.

Places Jesus went act as headings for the paragraphs to form an inverted circle: Consider:

Place and Paragraph Reference		Place and Paragraph Reference	
1	Nazareth (home) (1:9)	17	Home (3:20)
2	Into the desert (1:12)	16	Into the mountain (3:13)
3	Galilee/Sea (1:16)	15	Sea (3:7)
4	Capernaum/Synagogue (1:21)	14	Synagogue (3:1)
5	House of Simon (1:29)	13	House of God (2:26)
6	Lonely place (1:35)	12	Corn fields (2:23)
7	Came out (of home) (1:38)	11	Came out (2:17)
8	Galilee/seaside (1:39)	10	Beside sea (2:12)
	9 Capernaum (Home base) (2:1)		

Space does not allow for a full exploration of all parallels within each paragraph pair. But at least some of these parallels need to be shown in order to demonstrate these exist. In other explanations of a semiotic analysis of the gospels, for example in PowerPoints related to www.valuesclarification.org parallels between the first, second and third paragraph pairs have been shown. So, in this explanation of the analysis, parallels in the fourth, fifth and sixth pairs are shown instead.

The central point emerging from all the paragraph pairs appears to come under the heading of “What Authority (and law) is Based Upon”.

Points in Common

1st Paragraph in a pair	Focal Point	2nd Paragraph in a pair
4 Capernaum/ Synagogue Accusation against “be quiet” Unclean spirit out Astounded at authority	Challenges corruption	14 Synagogue Accusation against “be quiet” Hand was restored Plotting to destroy
5 House - Simon She served them Question of identity	Gives priority to people	13 House - God He gave them bread Question of identity
6 Lonely place Need to pray Looking for him	Respects human needs	12 Grain fields Need to eat “Look”

As stated above, in a mainly illiterate society that relied on oral traditions, “techniques” for memorisation such as inverted circles (chiasmus) were common. Also, because people were accustomed to such a “pairing” within a group of stories a general sweep of commonality in the parallels would be sufficient for them to realise that this was the structure being used. People were not expecting a “mathematical” accuracy in such parallels. Also, opposites were used at times in order to

connect the parallels, for example “a bad spirit” could be paralleled with “a good spirit”.

If one goes through all the eight paragraph pairs in a proposed Section A in Mark and a ‘pivotal,’ point in common, noted within each pair then the following list can be compiled.

Ref.	Point in Common	Ref.
<i>1:9-12</i>	In accord with the cause of existence	<i>3:20-35</i>
<i>1:12-13</i>	Extends to good and bad	<i>3:13-19</i>
<i>1:14-20</i>	Requires support	<i>3:7-12</i>
<i>1:21-28</i>	Challenges corruption	<i>3:1-6</i>
<i>1:29-34</i>	Gives priority to people	<i>2:26-28</i>
<i>1:35-37</i>	Respects human needs	<i>2:23-25</i>
<i>1:38</i>	Can innovate new order	<i>2:15-22</i>
<i>1:39-45</i>	Reaches to crowds	<i>2:13-14</i>
	Ready to forgive (<i>2:1-12</i>)	

Then if one looks at the list as a whole, a summary statement about them can be made. In this case they all give an indication as to “What Authority is Based Upon”. Or, putting this another way, the list points to elements of true authority, which in turn is the basis of authentic law. .



(d) Mark's Section B
Order Needs a Sense of Direction

Moving on, and following the same “technique” of analysis and assuming that the writer may be using the same “grammar” of paragraph construction, a Section B emerges from the text of Mark 4:1 – 9:1. Consider:

Locations where Jesus went-- in a concentric circle.

Place and Ref.		Place and Ref.	
1.	Beside the sea (4:1)	19	Caesarea (seaside) (8:27)
2,	Alone (4:10)	18	Bethsaida retreat (8:22)
3	other side of sea (4:35)	17	other side of sea (8:13)
4	out of boat (5:2)	16	in the ship (8:10)
5	Other side of sea (5:21)	15	Decapolis near sea (7:31)
6	into a house (5:39)	14	into a house (7:24)
7	into own country (6:1)	13	into private house (7:37)
8	in ship (6:32)	12	out of ship (6:54)
9	mountain to pray (6:46)	11	Gennasarat/ anchored (6:53)
10.	walking on the sea (6:49)		

If we again take the fourth, fifth and sixth paragraph pairs, we can see further parallels between the stories. Note parallels are in the same sequence cf.

1st Paragraph in pair	Point in Common	2nd Paragraph in pair
4 out of ship		14 in the ship
Country of Gerasenes Man.. unclean spirits Unwelcome sign of drowned pigs	Realise big picture is complex	Region of Dalmanutha Pharisees (bad spirit) Unwelcome sign of a warning
5 other side sea		13 Decapolis bysea
Lay hands upon Touched his garment (in a great crowd)	Value personal contact	Put hand upon Touched his tongue In a great crowd
6 into a house		12 into a house
Uproar Daughter asleep Lack of belief Daughter cured	Believe in own power	Could not be hidden Daughter possessed Great belief Daughter cured

If one goes through all the paragraph pairs in this proposed Section B and compare them in order to find a key point in common the result is as follows:

<i>Ref. in Mark.</i>	Point in Common	<i>Ref. in Mark</i>
4:1-9	Be receptive	8:27-9:1
4:10-34	Perceive as well as see	8:22-26
4:35-41	Note dignity of the person	8:13-21
5:1-20	See big picture is complex	8:10-13
5:21-34	Value personal contact	7:31-8:9
5:35-45	Believe in own power	7:24-30
6:1-30	Avoid bad actions	7:17-23
6:31-45	Avoid over-formality	6:54-7:16
6:46	Stay anchored	6:53
	Avoid hard-heartedness (6:47-52)	

Also, if one looks at the above list in terms of a “sweep” of the points made, a summary heading can be seen as relating to the need for a sense of direction. Again, if one bears in mind that Mark may well be working out a basic definition of law (cf. Judaism) and order (cf. Hellenism), then the following heading “Order is Based on a Sense of Direction” fits with this. There is the implication that the above points are needed if either an individual or a society as a whole, is going to have a sense of direction. A sense of direction is needed in a society that is based upon order. Otherwise it could implode.

One is reminded here of the Shakespearian tragedy of *King Lear*. King Lear wanted to retain his status as King with an army contingent of one hundred soldiers. But he also wanted

his daughters to take over the responsibility of running his kingdom. This meant Lear's soldiers had nothing to do. Their "order" imploded into riotous behaviour and chaos because they no longer had a 'sense of direction'. Lear's position was untenable.

(c) Mark's Section C
A Golden Rule is the Way of the Child

If we continue with the use of semiotic analysis and the background idea that Mark's gospel has an underlying "logico-semantic" level beneath the surface of the text that relates to Christianity's basic social structure, then we reach a Section C. Here, it appears that Mark is exploring what type of person could function within a hybrid society that consists of the two differing world views of Judaism and Hellenism.

The text from Mk 9:2 to 10:31 which appears to form a Section C, arguably consists of three sub-sections. The first deals with the transfiguration of Jesus on a mountain in which his garments become white as snow and a voice out of the cloud says "This is my son, the Beloved. Hear him." (Mk 9:7). The next sub-section, by contrast, shows a man trying to rid his son of an evil spirit. The disciples try to help here but only Jesus can expel such a spirit (Mk 9:14-29). The next sub-section consists of Jesus (in Capernaum) putting a child before the disciples and saying "Whoever receives such children in the name of me, receives me" (Mk 9:37). Further along in this same sub-section (now in Judea) Jesus asserts the need for a stable family. He again asserts the need to respect children.

Let the children come to me. Do not prevent them. For of such is the kingdom of God. Truly I tell you, whoever fails

to receive the kingdom of God like a child may not enter into it. (Mk 10:14-15.)

It is evident in this Section C that Mark is drawing the attention of the auditor/reader to the teaching of Jesus about children. The implication here is that people who can enter into “the kingdom” (arguably a hybrid, organic society consisting of both Judaic and Hellenistic world views) need to be like children.

Towards the end of this Section C, an apparently young man approaches Jesus wanting to inherit eternal life. Jesus puts out the challenge to him “Go sell what things you have and give them to the poor and you will have treasure in heaven. And coming follow me.” (Mk 10.). In the story this man who had great wealth, was not prepared to give up his wealth and he went away sad. If one looks more closely at what Jesus says to the man, there is a parallel between the challenge here and the lifestyle of a child. A child does not have the sense of owning property. Nor does a child in general exercise power or run a household. By implication there are also parallels with a lifestyle that is based upon the renunciation of money, power and sex.

Part One of this research project, *Is Christian Morality Unique?* has elaborated on the three concerns about money, power and relationship,, as being basic to the exercise of Christian morality. It also made brief reference to the lifestyle of Religious who takes the vows of poverty (cf. money), chastity (cf. sex) and obedience (cf. power). They arguably undertake the lifestyle of an “adult-child”.

Consider the challenge here in terms of sociology and a logico-semantic level of Mark’s text. It appears the renunciation of these three things, or at least detachment from them, enables one to have the flexibility and openness needed to move

between a society that is based upon Judaism (and law) and a society based upon Hellenism (and order). How so? Without the attachments that relate to money, power and sex there is less likelihood of someone being entrenched in one or other of the two world views. That is, they are less likely to be afraid of what they might lose by being more open to another point of view. They have a “cultural” flexibility.

**(d) Mark’s Section D
The Power of One Depends Upon Coping**

A possible Section D in Mark, Mk 10:31 to 16:8 (according to this analysis), begins with the journey of Jesus towards his crucifixion. For Mark, organising the material here around “place hooks” for this Section would not have worked so well. The drama of the passion is played out in only a few places. In any case it appears Mark the writer wanted to emphasise here, the importance of a following of Jesus who is the archetype as it were, of the adult “child”. The Section therefore explores how people responded to Jesus during the drama of his passion and how they continue to respond to him. It appears in such case that the paragraph “hooks” in this Section, are responses to Jesus. These hooks also enable a Section D in Mark to link back to a Section C, when Jesus challenges the (young) man and says to him “Come follow me.” By implication, in Section D, it is a person’s response to Jesus that will play a key role in defining who they are who they will become.

In Mark’s Section D paragraphs are again structured into a concentric circle with parallels between each pair. Also again, if the key point common to each pair is isolated out and these points are then listed together, there emerges an overall heading which is common to all the paragraphs in the Section. Such a heading could be, “The Power of One is Based Upon Coping”.

The result of this structuring is that at one level, Section D presents Jesus as an individual who has to face up to his crucifixion in extreme desolation. At the same time there is also a theme being developed here that shows how the destiny of the individual is affected by their own, personal response to Jesus. Consider the paragraph pairs, the hooks and the points in common as follows:

THE POWER OF ONE IS BASED UPON COPING

1st Paragraph in pair	Point in Common	2nd Paragraph in pair
1 Following afraid (10:32-34)	Fear	27 Women flee (16:8)
2 James, John (10:35-45) Wanting to sit on right	Place getting	26 Magdalene et al (16:1-7) Angel sitting on right
3 Bartimaeus (10:46-47) Asking to see	Asking	25 Joseph of Arimathea (15:42-47) Asking for body
4 Crowd deny (10:48-52) title of “Son of David	Crowd Pressure	24 Crowd deny (15:22-41) Title of “King of Jews”

5	Colt carries Jesus (11:1-8)	Accepting help	23	Simon of Cyrene carries Jesus' cross (15:21)
6	“The ones” Call out (11:9-26) “Hossanna”	Praise and mockery	22	soldiers Call out (15:16-20) “Hail King of Jews”
7	Chief priests ask (11:27-12:12) “By whose authority?”	Belief in self	21	Chief priests, elders, scribes, Pilate ask (15:1-15) “King of Jews?”
8	Pharisees, Herodians (12:13-17)	Civic authority	20	priests, elders, scribes (14:53-72)
	Re authority of Caesar			Usurp authority of Caesar
9	Sadducees (12:18-27) Query resurrection	Regeneration	19	Young man in nightgown (25:51-52) Cf. shroud
10	Scribe asks (12:28-34) “love neighbour”	Love and loyalty	18	One betrays (14:44-46) betrayal
	Crowd Heard gladly (12:35-44)	Crowd fickleness		Followers Fled (14:47-50)

11	one of disciples (13:1-2) insecurity	Insecurity	17	one of the twelve (4:42-43) insecurity
12	Peter, James, John (13:3-37) asking	Finding support	16	Peter, James, John (14:12-41) grieving
13	priests/scribes (14:1-2) plotting	Plots and criticism	15	Judas (14:10-11) plotting

14
Anointing woman “To be remembered”

Taking initiative

(14:3-9)

The 10th paragraph pair has a change in paragraph sequence? However the exception here proves the rule. It appears Mark is deliberately tying together individual guilt with corporate guilt.

For Sections A and B above, the extent of parallels between paragraph pairs was demonstrated by showing further parallels between the fourth, fifth and sixth paragraph pairs. To continue this demonstration of similarities, the fourth, fifth and sixth pairs of Section are compared below. Again there is commonality in the sequence of details.

4	<p>Crowd deny (10:48-52)</p> <p>Denied title He cried out Let me see Immediately saw Followed him</p>	<p>“Son of David” “King of Jews”</p> <p>Crowd Pressure</p>	24	<p>Crowd deny (15:22-41)</p> <p>Denied title Jesus cried out Let us see (immediately) saw Followed him</p>
5	<p>Disciples & Colt (11:1-8)</p> <p>Co-opted to carry</p>	<p>Carries Jesus Carries cross</p> <p>Accepting help</p>	23	<p>Simon Cyrene (15:21)</p> <p>Co-opted to carry</p>
6	<p>The ones (11:9-26)</p> <p>“Hosanna” -coming Kingdom Inadequacy of fig tree Inadequacy of temple system</p> <p>Promise re power in kingdom Will forgive</p>	<p>“Hosanna” “Hail King of Jews”</p> <p>Praise and mockery</p>	22	<p>soldiers (15-16-20)</p> <p>“Hail King of Jews”</p> <p>Mockery re power in kingdom Will crucify</p>

A Summing Up of Mark as an Introduction to the Gospels to Follow

Mark, the first gospel writer, set out a “grammar” relating to the logico-semantic level of his text. This text and its logico-semantic level, was largely followed by the writers Matthew and Luke and even John. Scholars estimate that the gospels of Matthew and Luke were written around 85 CE, fifteen years after Mark²⁸. Matthew and Luke relied heavily on the text of Mark.²⁹ They also continued on with Mark’s interest in demonstrating the characteristics of Judaism and Hellenism at the logico-semantic level beneath the text of their gospels. In their case however they put a focus on one or the other. Matthew put focus on the characteristics of Judaism as adopted by the followers of Jesus.³⁰ Luke put focus on Hellenism as adopted by the followers of Jesus.³¹ Luke also wrote a Part B to his gospel called *The Acts of the Apostles*. This starts with the ascension of Jesus into Heaven. It is in book of *Acts* that the hybrid society consisting of Judaism and Hellenism is “launched” into the world of the first century CE.

The fourth gospel, the gospel of John, was written around the turn of the century.³² John deals with the dialectical tension that continued on within the hybrid society that gradually came to be called Christianity. John puts special emphasis on the identity of Jesus as the “lynch pin” of the two constituent societies. In terms of a logico-semantic level uncovered by the semiotic analysis, it is in the person of Jesus that his followers

²⁸ Moloney, *Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, evangelist* ix.

²⁹ Mark Allan Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* (New York/ Mahwah: Paulist Press, 1990), 18.

³⁰ Cf. Daniel J. Harrington, *The Gospel of Matthew*, 22.

³¹ Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?*

³² Cf. Neusner, J. “Judaism in a time of crisis: Four responses to the destruction of the second Temple.” *Judaism* 21 (1972) 313-27.

http://preteristarchive.com/Books/pdf/1980_jacoby_the-destruction-of-jerusalem.pdf [accessed September 2019].

are to find their identity. Thus it is in a following a Jesus that Christianity is to be defined.

(Note: Scholars believe the Mark 16:9-30 was added later on and it is not included in this analysis.³³)



³³ The R.S.V. Interlinear Greek-English New Testament, trans. Alfred Marshall (Basingstoke: Marshall Pickering, 1988), 215.

**(b) Semiotic Analysis
of the Gospel of Matthew
“Internalise the Law”**

Was Matthew a Sociologist?

The basic proposal of Part 2 in *Is Christian Morality Unique* is to show the uniqueness of Christianity is to be found in its structural identity. The analysis of Mark above shows the two bases of Judaism, a law based society and Hellenism, an order-based society.

The demonstration that these two societies are embedded in the structure of Christianity is to be further shown by an analysis of the gospels of Matthew and Luke. Matthew shows the essentially Judaic foundations of Christianity. Luke shows the essentially Hellenistic (Greek philosophical) foundations of Christianity.

A semiotic analysis of the gospel of Matthew shows how, structurally, he follows on from the gospel of Mark. Matthew was writing from within a community of Christians who could be described as Jewish Christians.³⁴ They had been raised as Jews: they were heavily steeped in its traditions and expectations and they wanted to retain this heritage. He set out to show them the message and a following of Jesus was a follow-on from their own background. Scholars observe the frustration that Matthew the writer felt with mainstream Judaism and its refusal to accept a following of Jesus. Mainstream Jews were instead looking to the Pharisees for

³⁴ Cf. Stegner, William Richard, “The Temptation Narrative: A Study in the Use of Scripture by Early Jewish Christians,” in *Biblical Research* 25, 1990.

leadership.³⁵ Scholars point out that Matthew wrote from within a community that had in fact been alienated from mainstream Judaism.³⁶ As mentioned above around the time the gospel was written (about 85 CE), an edict from a Jewish leadership meeting in Jamnia had ordered that a “prayer” should be recited in all Synagogues that put a curse on Christians.³⁷

Because of the edict some people were reeling from being ostracised from the Synagogue because they had considered themselves to be Jews who followed Jesus. Outsiders and apparently some members thought of themselves as being part of a “sect” within Judaism (cf. Acts 24:5). Recall how the gospels show that in the time of Jesus back in the 30’s CE there were a wide range of groups within Judaism. These included the Pharisees, the Sadducees, the Zealots, the Scribes, the priestly caste, the elders and so on. There were also groups such as the Essenes who (for some reason) are not mentioned in the gospel texts but who at the time of Jesus were a strong presence within Judaism.³⁸ Matthew needed to show that instead of being part of such a group the followers of Jesus were something more. He used the underlying structure of his gospel to help in this.

However, how does an underlying structure of his gospel continue on from the structure of Mark? In the present context one can ask “How can a semiotic analysis of the gospel demonstrate this?” If we focus upon the sociologist dimension as in the above analysis of Mark, then a suggested outline of Matthew’s gospel is as follows:

³⁵ Luz *New Testament Theology: The Theology of the Gospel of Matthew*, 40.

³⁶ Luz, *New Testament Theology*, 2.

³⁷ Wilcockson, *A Student’s Guide ...*, 101.

³⁸ Cf. Robert Broderick, *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, (London: Nelson Publications, 1990), 194-5.

Section A Matthew's gospel picks up and carries on from Mark's Section A. Here Mark describes the basis of authority and law cf. Judaism. Matthew's Section A consists of an introduction showing that Jesus emerged from the traditions and expectations of a Judaic society.

Sections B, C Matthew then points out, in his Sections B and C, the attitudes needed to internalise the morality of Jewish law. At this level he argues such attitudes enable the individual to move beyond external observance into taking on the positive attributes of a law-based society.

Section D In his Section D Matthew goes on to describe the qualities that characterise a whole environment that is based upon internalised law and the spirit of Wisdom.

Section E In his Section E Matthew sets out the difficulties that such a society has to deal with because of its tendencies towards narrowness and an over-stress on external law.

Section F. Finally in a Section F, which is about the passion narrative, Matthew shows the example of Jesus who leads through a forgiving relationship.

Throughout the gospel of Matthew the follower of Jesus is presented in the figure of the disciple.

How can it be demonstrated this proposed structure undergirds the gospel. It could be pointed out first of all, that Matthew's description of this type of Judaic-Christian community is presented in a "time capsule". Donald Senior for instance quotes comments of the scholar David Bauer about the great discourses in Matthew. They are:

like the flowing lines of a symphony (rather than) the fixed girders supporting a building.... seams of turns within the

gospel's organic structure rather than as potential keys to a single fixed blueprint³⁹

In terms of a semiotic analysis of this gospel, it appears that instead of organising paragraphs according to patterns based upon place, Matthew instead begins virtually all of his paragraphs with a statement about time, whether specified or implied.

Actually, this emphasis on time fits in with his underlying theme about Judaism and the law. Observations about the natural law for instance are based upon causes and effects within nature and these in turn are framed within a time-span.

However, the emphasis of Matthew on time rather than place presents a problem in the organisation of his material. Paragraphing based on the "hooks" of places are fairly self-evident. Time statements on the other hand, can be vague. Also, whatever about the viability of Matthew starting individual paragraphs with a time statement, one could wonder how he would organise whole sections of his material in a similar way.

A reader of the gospel, reflecting on such a problem, can in fact uncover the "break" that Matthew has apparently devised in order to separate one main section of his text from the next one. If we assume that he, like Mark, wanted to "break" up his text into sections in order to describe a society which, in his case was Judaism, then we can first look for any obvious mechanism that could break one section from the next. An obvious Section A at the start of the gospels includes stories about the birth of Jesus. An obvious last section of the gospel is the Passion narrative. One can ask the question. If

³⁹ David Bauer, *The Structure of Matthew's gospel: A Study in Literary Design* (Sheffield: Armond, 1988) Note: Quoted in Senior *What are they Saying about Matthew*, 36).

Matthew is dividing off the Passion narrative from the preceding parts of the gospel how does he do this? Immediately before the Passion story we find the sentence “After Jesus had finished these words.” (Mt. 26:1). If Matthew is using this sentence to wind up the second last section before moving into the last section of his gospel, is he using the same sentence to break up the other main sections? In fact, in going backwards through the text we find much the same sentence occurring in Mt. 19:1, then in Mt. 11:1, then in Mt. 7:28. Also when Matthew is finishing off the first section of infancy narratives and moving into a Section B there is the sentence, “Opening his mouth he said.” This verse of Mt 5:2 also fits with the “divider” sentence. “After Jesus had finished these words.”

Using a Section break with mention of “the word” of Jesus also fits with Judaism. Recall the opening verses of Genesis “God said “Let there be light” (Gen 1:3) etc. To show the “words” of Jesus were also sacred, it was fitting to use a statement about the “words” of Jesus as the link between gospel sections.

The suggestion being made here, that the sentence “After Jesus had finished these words” divides up Matthew’s gospel into sections, is not a new one. In the 1930’s the writer Benjamin Bacon pointed out how this sentence was possibly being used to divide up the gospel.⁴⁰ Donald Senior makes a comment about this, saying that whether someone agrees with him or not, “Bacon highlighted certain aspects of Matthew’s narrative that are featured in almost every attempt to solve the riddle of its structure.”⁴¹

⁴⁰ Benjamin Bacon, *Studies in Matthew* (London: Constable, 1930).

⁴¹ Senior, *What are they Saying About Matthew*, (New York: Paulist Press, 1996), 26.

C Acquire Attributes to Internalise Law

Mt.8:1-10:42

Paragraph “hooks” cf. present participles of coming and going

		<i>Mt.</i>
Ask for help	Leper	8:1-4
Recognise authority	Centurion	8:5-13
Accept touch	Simon’s mother-in-law	8:14-15
Accept healing	Possessed and sick	8:16-17
Be independent of crowd	Break away from crowd	8:18
Be ready to move	Foxes have holes	8:19-20
Leave excuses	Bury my father?	8:21-22
Follow	Embark on ship	8:23
Trust	He rebuked the winds	8:24-27
Prioritise	Herd of pigs drowned	8:28-34
Forgive	paralytic forgiven	9:1-8
Entrust	Matthew called	9:9-13
Renew	New wines new skins	9:14-17
Lead	Jesus follows Jairus	9:18-19
Touch	woman with blood flow	9:20-22
Ignore ridicule	(from) Flute players	9:23-24
Believe in own power	Jesus raises girl	9:25-26
Believe	Two blind men	9:27-34
Teach and heal	Proclaim gospel	9:35
Pray for harvesters	Harvest	9:36-38
Reach out.	Sent forth twelve disciples	10:1-42

Finishing with: *And it came to pass when Jesus finished giving charge to his twelve disciples (11:1)*

**D Develop Environment of
Internalised Law**
Mt 11:2-18:35

Paragraph “hooks” an opening time statement
made or implied

Attributes of Wisdom (and Jesus) and
Generalised quotes at the end of the paragraphs

			<i>Mt.</i>
1	Proves	Wisdom is justified by her works	11:2-19
2	Excuses	More tolerable for Sodom	11:20-24
3	Relieves	Yoke is easy	11:25-30
4	Prophecies	Son of Man, Lord of the Sabbath (cf. cornfields)	12:1-8
5	Brings hope	Nations will hope (cf. Sabbath)	12:9-21
6	Justifies	Justified by your words (v.Beelzebub)	12:22-37
7	Discerns	Thus it will be to this generation (worse spirits)	12:38-45
8	Relates cf. God’s will	Whoever does the will of the Father	12:46-50
9	Bears fruit	Sower whoever has ears hear it	13:1-9
10	Hears	Sower a hundred fold, sixty, or thirtyfold	13:10-23
11	Proclaims	I will utter things hidden from the foundation	13:24-35
12	Retrieves	Housemaster – new and old things	13:36-52
13	Is affected by	Not powerful deeds because of unbelief	13:53-58

14	Listens	Reported to Jesus	14:1-12
15	Is concerned	wind was blowing against him	14:13-24
16	Heals	As many as touched were completely healed	14:25-46
17	Dismisses petty	that which comes out of mouth defiles	15:1-12
18	Sees clearly	Unwashed hands not defile the man	15:12-20
19	Praises	Great of thee the faith	15:21-28
20	Feeds	Ate all and were satisfied	15:29-39
21	Warns	Not to take heed from leaven of Pharisees	16:1-4
22	Recalls	Be wary - teaching of Pharisees & Sadducees	16:5-12
23	Builds	on this rock I will build of me the church	16:13-20
24	Foresees	Some here by no means taste death	16:21-28
25	Shines	they saw nobody except Jesus	17:1-8
26	Anticipates	Son of man about to suffer	17:9-13
27	Empowers	Nothing will be impossible to you	17:14-20
28	Grieves	Grieved	17:22-23
29	Pays dues	Give them (money) for me and thee	17:24-27
30	Is present	Where 2 or 3 assembled there am I	18:1-20
31	Forgives	Forgive brother of him from heart	18:21-35

Finishing with: *And it came to pass when ended Jesus these words (19:1)*

16	Narrowness	Christ the son of David?	22:41-46
17	Hypocrisy	Scribes	23:1-38
18	Temple reliance	Not a stone left on a stone	24:1-2
19	False prophets	False prophets will be raised	24:3-24
20	Lack of watchfulness	Watch ye therefore	24:25-51
21	Presumption	ten virgins with lamps	25:1-13
22	Lack of development	dug earth and hid	25:14-30
23	Lack of accountability	least ones	25:31-46

Finishing with:

“And it came to pass when Jesus ended all these words” (26:1)

F Lead Through a Forgiving Relationship

Mt.26:1-28:20

(Paragraph “hooks”, mention of word “disciple”)

Disciples hear passively	26:1-5
Disciples V ointment woman	26:6-16
Disciples make a routine inquiry	26:17
Disciples follow instructions	26:18-19
Twelve disciples deny betrayal	26:20-29
Disciples initiated into covenant	26:26-29
All disciples claim will never betray	26:30-35
Disciples asked for support	26:36-39
Disciples fall asleep	26:40-44
Disciples – one betrays	26:45-55
Disciples all leaving him, fled	26:56-27:56

27:56

(Crucifixion narrative, and then)

A disciple (Arimathaea) asks for body	27:57-66
Disciples told of resurrection	28:1-7
Announce to brothers (disciples)	28:8-10
Disciples maligned by others	28:11-15
Eleven disciples challenged to “disciple”	28:16-20

Finishing with:

“I will be with you until the end of time” (28:20)

Recall that Mark in his gospel as analysed above, makes an exception to the concentric patterns of his gospel with his Section C which is about “the child”. Matthew’s Section A is also about “the child”, which in this case a child of Judaism. In Section A of Matthew there is also an “informal” approach to the structure of the text.

Because Matthew’s gospel appears to be structured around statements of time, some of which are implied, the actual delineation of paragraphs is not so easy to pick up. As well, occasionally an apparent time statement such as “now” is used to emphasise a point rather than make a statement about time. However despite the more abstract approach, there are two interesting indications in Matthew’s Sections B and C that suggests he is setting out his gospel structure in reference to the structure of Mark. If we look at the central paragraph in Mark’s Section A, it tells us about a man being let down through the roof of a house to get access to Jesus. If we look at the central, eleventh paragraph in Matthew’s Section C, this is also about the man being let down through the roof. In both these cases it appears the key emphasis in this story is about forgiveness. Extra stress is given to this quality because of its

position in the middle of the Section. One might think such a parallel in placement is a coincidence. However consider Mark's Section B and Matthew's Section D. The central story in Mark's Section B tells about how Jesus walked on water. Compare this with Matthew's Section D with its thirty-one paragraphs. In this case, in the sixteenth paragraph which is in the middle of the section, we are again told about Jesus walking on water!

Another parallel that suggests more than a coincidence in structuring, is that the final paragraph in this same Section D of Matthew, is about forgiveness. It again appears that as with Mark's gospel, the act of forgiveness is being emphasised.

While the text of Matthew's gospel follows that of Mark, the details of Matthew's text show that he is putting a heavy emphasis on relationships between people and the development of these relationships. His interest in this theme can be seen in the shifts being made to describe the disciples just before the end of each section. As shown above, the sections close with "After Jesus had finished these words". However note how the followers of Jesus are being described. At the end of Section A we are told about the "many crowds" who begin to follow Jesus (Mt 4:25). At the end of Section B we are told of the "prudent" man who built his house upon rock (Mt 7:24). At the end of Section C we hear of "these little ones" who are given a cup of water in the name of a disciple (Mt 11:1). At the end of Section D we are told of the need "to forgive each of your brothers from your heart". (Mt 18:35). At the end of Section E we hear "if you failed to minister to one of these least ones, you failed to minister to me." (Mt 25:45). Finally at the end of Section F and the gospel Jesus tells his disciples to go out and make disciples of others. In this sense they are described as "disciplers" (Mt. 28:19).

There is a gradation here, from "crowds" to "a prudent man" to "little ones" ", to "a brother", to the "least ones" and finally to

one who makes disciples of others. A personal growth has been taking place.

Matthew's final Section F shows particular interest in discipleship. In fact here, the word "disciple" appears to be used as a hook for the paragraphs that frame the passion narrative. In this Section F the disciples are challenged to grow from a passive following of Jesus to active participation in his mission. During the Section we are told "the disciples, all leaving him fled" (Mt.26:56). Mark had said "all fled" (Mk 14:50). But Matthew wants to remind the auditor/reader of the failure of the disciples. Yet despite the desertion, at the end of the Section the disciples are challenged to become "disciplers" of others throughout the whole world (Mt. 28:19) The gospel finally concludes with the promise of Jesus to be with his disciples until the end of time. (Mt. 28:20).

As a sociologist, Matthew provides a "best" description of Judaic-Christianity as expressed within a society based upon Law. At the same time, in his Section E, he describes the pitfalls of such a society. It can become too narrow, rigid and bogged down with external rules and regulations. Ironically enough it can also lack accountability. Matthew finally shows how Jesus puts out a challenge to the people in this sort of society to open up and extend internalised law towards the whole world.

We could understand this "description" provided in Matthew's gospel, to represent one side of Christian society.

(c) A Semiotic Analysis of the Gospel of Luke:

“Give Direction to Order”

Was Luke a Sociologist?

Like Matthew, Luke relied heavily on the gospel of Mark.⁴² Also like Matthew he redacted the text to suit his own interpretation of the life of Jesus and the interests of the community from which he was writing.⁴³ Scholars suggest Luke was writing at about the same time as Matthew around 85 CE.⁴⁴ But his was a different type of community. On the one hand Matthew was writing within a community steeped in the heritage of Judaism but which was in conflict with mainstream Judaism.⁴⁵ Luke on the other hand was writing from within a community dominated by people from a Hellenistic/Greek philosophical background. Hence the name of Theophilus which he addresses at the start of both the gospel and Acts is a Greek name.⁴⁶ Luke assures Theophilus he will take care in presenting “the truth” in his “orderly account” of the life of Jesus (Lk 1:3):

At the logico-semantic level Luke uses “the grammar” that was developed by Mark and continued on with some exceptions by Matthew. Like Matthew and arguably as a sociologist, Luke sets out to describe the best model of the particular society that he wants to present. In this case it is a Hellenistic society. After doing this, like Matthew, Luke points out the shortcomings of the society he is describing. In the case of

⁴² Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* 18.

⁴³ Cf. Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* 9.

⁴⁴ Powell, *What are They Saying about Luke*, 48.

⁴⁵ Powell, *What are they Saying about Matthew*, 49.

⁴⁶ Powell, *What are They Saying About Luke?* 1990.

Luke's society such pitfalls appear to centre around an over-stress on idealism.

Again like Matthew, Luke begins his gospel with a Section A with an informal type of structure. This provides narratives about the birth and early life of Jesus. However in Luke's case, rather than showing Jesus as coming from the heritage of Judaism, he presents him as a child of the universe (cf. Lk 3:38).

A closer look at the gospel structures is as follows. If we compare the gospels of Luke and Matthew, after a Section A on infancy narratives, both of the writers move into a description of the individual attributes that are best suited to the society which they are describing. They then provide a description of the best characteristics of these societies at the corporate level. For Matthew such characteristics reflect the qualities of a well-run household as evidenced in "the works of wisdom" (cf. Matthew's Section D) and an environment of internalised law. . For Luke at the corporate level these "best" qualities parallel those of a democratic society which is open to improvement (cf. Luke's Section C). Each writer also provides a description of the limitations of the society they describe. A society such as Matthew's has to be wary of over-emphasis on external law (cf. his Section E). A society such as Luke's has to be wary of an over-emphasis on idealism (cf. his Section D) . To some extent the two sets of failings can be summed up as "narrowness" on the part of Judaism and "a loud voice" on the part of Hellenism. Then we find these both negative traits appearing in Luke's account of Jesus' so-called trial.

Both the evangelists finish their gospels with the narrative of the passion of Jesus (Matthew's Section F and Luke's Section F). Scholars note that the passion narratives across the gospels

are quite similar.⁴⁷ They also say deviation from Mark's account highlights a gospel writer's own particular interests. In Matthew the passion narrative stresses the testing of Jesus' trust in relationship, both in his disciples and in God (cf. Mt. 27:42). For Luke the narrative shows the self-empowerment of Jesus despite his powerless situation (cf. Lk 23:34).

Luke's Gospel "Give Direction to Order"

Section A

INFANCY NARRATIVE

Luke 1:1 – 4:30

(with a general prose structure)

Luke's Section B:

Acquire Qualities for Ordered Community

Luke's Section A is his infancy narrative with an informal structure. In Section B of Luke, paragraphs are structured around the paragraph "hooks" of place and these describe the location of Jesus and the disciples. In Luke's use of these "place" hooks his "grammar" is similar to that of Mark. However there is also a difference. On the one hand, in Mark's Sections A and B he is setting out "definitions" of a law base for a society and then an order base for a society.

⁴⁷ Cf. Burton H. Throckmorton, Jr, *Gospel Parallels: A Synopsis of the First Three Gospels* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1979).

Luke on the other hand, is focussing on a Hellenistic society and its emphasis on order. Mark's description of the base of a Hellenistic society in his Section B is arguably summed up by, "Order is based on a Sense of Direction". In Luke's Section B, he appears to recognise this observation of Mark, that is, a society based upon order needs a sense of direction. He is therefore wary about setting out the structure of his "place hooks" in the pattern of a concentric circle in the way that Mark has done before him. The last thing Luke needs is the suggestion that this sort of society is "going around in circles". Luke's society is to reflect a multi-cultural, urban environment that relies on ideas and rationalism to unite people rather than the ties of blood and tribalism. Because of this reliance on ideas it does not have the same kind of stability as a tribal "organism". As Mark had already "pointed" out in his gospel, it needs a united sense of direction. Because of this therefore, rather than rely on Mark's chiastic type of paragraph pattern (cf. ABCDCBA) Luke sets out his paragraph "hooks" in two linear patterns (cf. ABCDABCD). Thus, the second half of the "hooks" and their paragraphs repeat (and reinforce) the first half. The result is that once again the auditor/reader is given a "binocular" look at the points being made. At the same time these are headed in a specific direction, that is, Jerusalem.



Section B**ACQUIRE QUALITIES FOR ORDERED COMMUNITY**

Luke 4:31-9:50

Paragraph hooks are place names cf. Jesus & disciples

1	Capernaum	14	Capernaum,
2	Synagogue/city	15	City Nain
3	House of Simon	16	House Simon
	disciple		Pharisee
4	Desert/cities/ synagogues	17	Cities & villages
5	Boats	18	Boat
6	City	19	Gerasenes/city
7	Deserts	20	Journey
8	In a house	21	To a house
9	House of Levi	22	Villages/houses
10	Cornfield	23	Bethsaida (retreat)
11	Hostile Synagogue	24	Alone
12	Mountain to pray	25	Mountain to pray
13	Down mountain	26	Down mountain

Go to Jerusalem

When discussing the parallel paragraphs in Mark's gospel, it was shown above that parallels within each paragraph pair extend beyond the "hook" parallel. In an illustration of the extended parallels in Mark, the fourth, fifth and sixth paragraph pairs were compared. To demonstrate the similarities again, parallels within Luke's fourth, fifth and sixth paragraph pairs are shown below. The many parallels found in the sixth pair, which are set out in the same sequence

in both paragraphs, strongly suggest that these paragraphs were deliberately crafted in order to highlight such parallels. Recall also that the two paragraphs come from quite different parts of the text, that is, Lk 5:12-15 and Lk 8:26-39.

Proclamation

- | | | | |
|----|--|-----|---|
| 4. | Desert/cities/synagogues
<i>Lk 4:42-44</i>
Proclaiming | 17. | Cities & villages
<i>Lk 8:1-21</i>
Proclaiming re sower |
|----|--|-----|---|

Power in Nature

- | | | | |
|----|---|-----|--|
| 5. | One of the boats
<i>Lk 5:1-11</i>

Put out into the deep
“Master”
Power of Word in nature
Astonishment seized them
Wind and water obeyed | 18. | Boat
<i>Lk 8:22-25</i>

Put out to sea
“Master”
Power of Word in nature
With fear they marvelled |
|----|---|-----|--|

Against Disease and Bad Spirits

- | | | | |
|----|---|-----|--|
| 6. | City
<i>Lk 5:12-15</i>

Outside city
Outsider/leper
‘on seeing Jesus’
Fell on his face and begged
Commands disease to go
Leprosy left
Tell nobody

“show yourself”
Jesus moved on
Accompanied
What Jesus said and did | 19. | Gerasenes/city
<i>Lk 8:26-39</i>

Outside city
Outsider/possessed
‘on seeing Jesus’
Fell prostrate and cried out
Commands unclean spirit
Demons left
Reported in city and farms

Went to see
Jesus moved on
Accompany?
What Jesus had done |
|----|---|-----|--|

An outline of Luke's Section B is again shown as follows, this time showing qualities that are needed for an ordered society.

ACQUIRE QUALITIES FOR ORDERED COMMUNITY

Place, Event, Ref	Quality	Place, Event, Ref
Capernaum <i>4:31-32</i> with authority	1. Authority	Capernaum <i>7:1-10</i> centurion/ authority
Synagogue/city <i>4:33-37</i> Demons all astonished	2. Compassionate Power	City Nain <i>7:11-35</i> widow & son all fear
House of Simon Peter <i>4:38-41</i> mother-in-law	3. Bodily care.	House of Simon Pharisee <i>7:36-50</i> ointment woman
Desert/cities/ synagogues <i>4:42-44</i> preaching kingdom of God	4. Proclamation	Cities & villages <i>8:1-21</i> preaching kingdom of God
Boats, <i>5:1-11</i> Big catch	5. Power in nature	Boat, <i>8:22-25</i> Stills storm
City, <i>5:12-15</i> leper	6. Opposes Disease & bad spirits	Gerasenes/city <i>8:26-39</i> demonised man

Deserts, <i>5:16</i> prayers	7.	Prayer	Journey <i>8:40-48</i> woman touching him
in House <i>5:17-26</i> forgives paralytic	8.	Forgiveness	House <i>8:49-56</i> raises Jairus' daughter,
House of Levi <i>5:27-39</i> Disciple .. new wineskins	9.	Proclamation	Villages/houses <i>9:1-10</i> Disciples...."who is this?:"
Cornfield <i>6:1-5</i> eating on Sabbath	10.	Nurturing	Bethsaida - retreat, <i>9:10-17</i> feeds 5,000
Hostile Synagogue, <i>6:6-11</i> What they might do to him	11.	Union with God	Alone <i>9:18-27</i> things to suffer
Mountains <i>6:12-16</i> to pray, picks 12	12.	Invitation	Mountain <i>9:28-36</i> To pray, picks 3
Down mountain, <i>6:17-49</i> foundation laid	13.	Solid foundation	Down mountain, <i>9:37-50</i> lay foundation re sayings

"Go to Jerusalem"9:51

Note that while Matthew uses a statement about time and the spoken word of Jesus to finish up his Sections, Luke uses a statement about the need for a sense of direction. Thus auditor/readers are constantly reminded to "Go to Jerusalem" cf. Lk 9:51.

Luke's Section C

Improve on Democracy

Moving on to Luke's Section C. Here, Luke apparently uses parties addressed (both singular and plural), as his paragraph "hooks". This is another reminder that the task of such a society is to unite a whole range of differing types of people.

Luke's Sections C and D about the corporate group appear to be set out on the one continuum line. Thus on the one hand, in his Section C, attributes appear to apply to a "well-run democracy". Then in his Section D there appears to emerge the failings that are to be found in a totalitarian society which has an over-stress on idealism. In the commonality of the paragraph "hooks" being used, there also appears to be the suggestion that the one sort of society described in Section C can slide into the failings of another social type as described in Section D. One is reminded here of some Taoist verses,

Beneath good fortune disaster crouches. ...The straightforward changes again into the crafty and the good changes again into the monstrous. ⁴⁸

⁴⁸ Lao Tzu, *Tao Te Ching* (London: Penguin Classics, 1963), 119.

If one also looks at this sort of a continuum line from the perspective of the twenty-first century, one wonders if it expresses both the contrasts and the comparisons between the two modern social systems of capitalism and communism. That is to say, they are two sides of the same coin!

The people “hooks” for Luke’s Sections C and D are as follows. Note that these are **not** set out in pairs. They are listed in the following format to show the wide range of people being addressed.

**Parties addressed in
Section C**

James & John
said one
to another
Another
seventy-two
certain lawyer
Martha
certain disciple
the crowds
woman in crowd
this generation
Pharisee
Lawyer
Disciples
Someone
Little flock
Peter
Crowds
Some
bent woman
Synagogue ruler

**Parties addressed in
Section D**

Someone
Pharisees
Lawyers & Pharisees
one inviting
one reclining
Crowds, many
Pharisees & scribes
Disciples
Pharisees
Disciples
Ten lepers
Pharisees
Disciples
them
Some
Disciples
Certain ruler
ones hearing
Peter
Twelve

throughout cities

A more detailed look at Luke's Section C is as follows:

Section C

IMPROVE ON DEMOCRACY

9:52-13:22

Paragraph "hooks" are Parties Addressed

Summary Point	Ref	Parties	Key Quote
1. . Stay peaceful	9:52-55	James & John	"He rebuked them (re fire to destroy)
2. . Be detached	9:56-58	said one	"Foxes have holes"
3. . Look to future	9:59-60	to another	Leave the dead to bury the dead
4. . Keep moving	9:61-62	Another	"looking behind not fit for kingdom"
5. . Reach out	10:1-24	seventy-two	"Two by two . . . sandals"
6. . Make love basic	10:25-37	certain lawyer	"Love Lord the God of Thee"
7. . Prioritise reflection	10:38-42	Martha	"(Mary has) better place
8. . Ask	11:1-13	certain disciple	"Our Father"
9. . Use spiritual power	11:14-26	the crowds	"The one not being with me against me is"
10. . Listen	11:27-28	woman in	"Blessed the womb"

		crowd	
11. . Seek wisdom	<i>11:29-36</i>	this generation	"Queen of the South"
12. . Prioritise integrity	<i>11:37-44</i>	Pharisee	"Outside clean, inside robbery"
13. . Accept outsiders	<i>11:45-54</i>	Lawyer	"build tombs of prophets"
14. . Prioritise truthful speech	<i>12:1-12</i>	Disciples	"what said in private proclaimed"
15. . Direction not treasure	<i>12:13-31</i>	Someone	"re inheritance"
16. . Focus on direction	<i>12:32-40</i>	Little flock	"seek kingdom & things added"
17. . Internalise honesty	<i>12:41-53</i>	Peter	"blessed slave . . faithful steward"
18. . Discern	<i>12:54-59</i>	Crowds	"face of earth you discern, this no"
19. . Nurture nature	<i>13:1-9</i>	Some	"Leave fig tree until I dig around it"
20. . Dignify woman	<i>13:10-13</i>	bent woman	"woman was bending double"
21. . Loosen bonds	<i>13:14-17</i>	Synagogue ruler	"Loosen bonds"
22. . Start from small	<i>13:18-22</i>	throughout cities	"mustard seed"

“to Jerusalem” 13:22

Luke's Section D Avoid Over-stress on Idealism

Section D

AVOID OVER-STRESS ON IDEALISM

Luke 13:24 - 18:31

Paragraph "hooks" are Parties Addressed

Opposition to Totalitarianism (V means against) Ref	Parties addressed	Key Quote
1. . V . "Saved" Leader <i>13:23-30</i>	Someone	"there are first ones who will be last"
2. . V . Rejection <i>13:31-35</i>	Pharisees	"c/f mother hen re Jerusalem"
3. . V . Hierarchy <i>14:1-11</i>	Lawyers & Pharisees	"chief places at table"
4. . V . Payment base <i>14:12-14</i>	one inviting	"invite poor persons"
5. . V . Elitism <i>14:15-24</i>	one reclining	"certain man a great supper"
6. . V . Ideological foundations <i>14:25-35</i>	Crowds, many	"lay foundation of house"
7. . V . exclusion of difference <i>15:1-32</i>	Pharisees & scribes	"hundred sheep . . prodigal son"
8. . V . over-absorbing system <i>16:1-13</i>	Disciples	"render account, shrewd steward"

9. . V . material obsession <i>16:14-31</i>	Pharisees	"rich man and Lazarus"
10. . V . inflexibility <i>17:1-10</i>	Disciples	"you should forgive"
Forgive	To Jerusalem	(17:11)
11. . V . ingratitude <i>17:11-19</i>	Ten lepers	"but where the nine?"
12. . V . alienation of dignity <i>17:20-21</i>	Pharisees	"Kingdom of God within you"
13. . V . predictability <i>17:22-37</i>	Disciples	"2 men on a couch, one taken"
14. . V . over-formalised justice <i>18:1-8</i>	them	"pray . . widow & judge"
15. . V . self-aggrandisement <i>18:9-14</i>	Some	"2 men went up to temple to pray"
16. . V . exclusion of children <i>18:15-17</i>	Disciples	"allow the children to me"
17. . V . over-focus material security <i>18:18-25</i>	Certain ruler	"all things sell & follow me"
18. . V . total self-reliance <i>18:26-27</i>	ones hearing	"things impossible . . possible with God"
19. . V . this life only <i>18:28-30</i>	Peter	22 "left house etc - receives life....."
20. . V . closure to the new <i>18:31-33</i>	Twelve	"Jerusalem, Son of men rise again"

“Behold we are going up to Jerusalem” 18:31

(Note the focus on both forgiveness and a sense of direction in the middle paragraph)

Luke’s Section E Act with Direction like Kingdom Figures

In the gospel, before Luke moves into his passion narrative, he outlines characteristics of a person who can be identified with Jesus in the setting of a Hellenistic society. This figure is either a follower of Jesus or a metaphorical presentation of Jesus himself. In this analysis they are both given the descriptive name of a “Kingdom figure”.

There is actually a marked difference between the “Kingdom” figure presented here and the follower of Jesus who, in the gospel of Matthew is a “disciple”. In Matthew the “disciple” has similarities with ‘the disciples’ as described in the gospel of Mark. Often in Mark’s account the disciples do not understand Jesus (cf. Mark 47:52). In Mark’s Section D they are firstly presented as people who follow Jesus in fear (Mark 10:32-34). Then at the end of the Section, which is set out in a concentric circle, the women disciples are told by the angel to report the resurrection of Jesus to the others. But they go away in fear (Mark 16:8). In a similar way in Matthew’s gospel when Jesus needed the disciples most “All the disciples fled” (Mt. 26:56). In contrast, Luke’s “kingdom figure” shows a personality type that is prepared to stand up for their own rights and challenge the secular society around them.

Luke's Section E is as follows:

Section E

ACT WITH DIRECTION LIKE KINGDOM FIGURE

Luke 13:35 – 21:37

Paragraph "hook" is Kingdom Figure

Action	Kingdom Figure	c/f Gospel
1. . obtains needed pity <i>18:35-43</i>	the disabled	Blind man of Jericho
2. . makes retribution <i>19:1-10</i>	the reformed public servant	Zaccheus the tax collector
3. . increases profits <i>19:11-27</i>	the investor	a certain man
4. . accepts welcome <i>19:28-38</i>	the king	Procession into Jerusalem
5. . warns of danger <i>19:39-44</i>	the teacher	the stones will cry out
6. . exercises stewardship <i>19:45-48</i>	the house master	Expelling the temple sellers
7. . exerts rights <i>20:1-19</i>	the owner	Husbandmen of vineyard
8. . maintains order <i>20:20-26</i>	the politician	Pay tribute to Caesar
9. . points beyond this life <i>20:27-40</i>	the teacher	cf, Widow had 7 husbands
10. . signals future	the ancestor	David calls 'him'

	20:41-44		Lord
11. . donates their only mite		the very poor	Widow giving mite
	20:45-21:4		
12. . comes with power		the Son of man	affects whole earth
	21:5-36		

Temple (in Jerusalem) 21:37

Luke's Section F

Let Forgiveness Prevail over Narrowness and the Loud voice

Luke's final Section is the passion narrative. As already noted, scholars say the few changes made to the Mark's passion account are of special significance to the purpose of the gospel.⁴⁹

Luke has an extra task at the end of his gospel because he tries to pull together the descriptions of both the Judaic and the Hellenistic societies. This is in preparation for his second book which is the *Acts of the Apostles*. In terms of the semiotic analysis being used in this project the *Acts* is described as "Launch the Society"

Recall that Paul, writing in the 50's CE before the gospel writers of 70CE and 85 CE, constantly insisted that Jesus brought together the Jewish and Gentile societies making them the one people, This teaching for instance is repeated in *Ephesians* cf.

⁴⁹ Donald Senior, *The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Mark*, (Wilmington, Del.: Michael Glazier, c. 1985).

For he is our peace, who has made us both one, and has broken down the dividing wall of hostility, by abolishing in his flesh the law of commandments and ordinances, that he might create in himself one new man in place of the two, so making peace, and might reconcile us both to God in one body through the cross, thereby bringing the hostility to an end. (Ephesians 2:14-16)

By the end of Luke's gospel and in the *Acts* the society described has two sides to it. This society had (and has) two arms to it. In preparation for his Part Two, the *Acts of the Apostles* when the leaders of Judaism are accusing Jesus (Luke 23:35) Luke shows the tendency towards narrowness that can be found in the Judaic law system. Then, as people shout out for the execution of Jesus, Luke also shows how a Greco Roman system of government can cave in to the "loud voice". In this case Pilate gives way to the loud voice. (Luke 23:23). Thus in Luke's passion narrative both the narrowness of the accusers and the "loud voice" of the mob, both contribute in their own way to the execution of Jesus.



A more detailed outline of the Passion narrative in Luke's Section F is as follows:

Section F

LET FORGIVENESS PREVAIL

OVER NARROWNESS AND THE LOUD VOICE

Luke 21:38-24:52:38

Paragraph "hook" is where Jesus is Located

	Action	"place" of Jesus	Key Quote
1	Crisis builds up <i>21:37-22:6</i>	Mt of Olives/ Temple	"Judas to betray him" <i>(22:5)</i>
2	Kingdom given to disciples <i>22:7-38</i>	Supper room	". . .to you a kingdom" <i>(22:29)</i>
3	Jesus faces betrayal <i>22:39-53</i>	(Mt Olives) "place"	"authority of darkness" <i>(22:40)</i>
4	Narrow law system & outside authority <i>22:54-71</i>	House of High Priest	"right of power of God" <i>(22:69)</i>
5	Loudness & Greco/Roman rule <i>23:1-25</i>	Around Jerusalem	"prevailed –voices of them" <i>(23:23)</i>
6	"forgive them" prevails <i>23:26-49</i>	"Place" of skull	"man this righteous was" <i>(23:47)</i>

- | | | | |
|---|--|-----------------------------|---|
| 7 | New life emerges
<i>22:50-24:11</i> | body
"placed"
in tomb | "He .was raised"
<i>(24:6)</i> |
| 8 | Inevitable crisis is
explained
<i>24:13-32</i> | from
Jerusalem | "behoved it to suffer"
<i>(24:26)</i> |
| 9 | Proclamation
(repent/forgive)
<i>24:33-53</i> | Jerusalem | "forgiveness
the nations"
<i>(24:7)</i> |

they returned to Jerusalem 24:52

Luke's *Acts of the Apostles* is a follow on from his gospel.



**(d) A Semiotic Analysis of
Acts of the Apostles
“Launch the Society”**

Again, Was Luke a Sociologist?

**Acts Section A
Intro to Identity and the Re-tracing of Steps**

As Luke moves into his second book he refers to details that actually go “backwards” into his gospel. These form a concentric pattern such as ABCDEDCBA.

Consider some of these details as follows:

**Narrative at the start of
Acts**

**Narrative at the end of
Luke’s Gospel**

(Refs going forwards)

(Refs going backwards)

Jesus taken up to heaven
“Stay in Jerusalem”
Restore Israel
2 men shining robes
Olive grove
Upper room
Judas betrays

Jesus withdrew
Begin from Jerusalem
Hoping to redeem Israel
2 men shining robes
Mountain of olives
Supper room
Judas betrays

Etc.

The pattern of referencing found at the start of Acts enables Luke's second book to pick up on details in the Gospel and show a continuity between the two. At the same time, Luke's book of *Acts of the Apostles* is not constrained by the need for a close following and redaction of the Gospel of Mark. A reading of *Acts* therefore shows that the text here is looser. There is an ordering of the paragraphs but they do not appear to be as "tightly" controlled as in the gospel itself.

Also the *Acts* has a different story to tell. Actually much of the material in the second half of this book describes events that took place in the life of Paul in the 50's CE.⁵⁰ The events reflect a quite different situation from what the gospels describe in the life of Jesus twenty years beforehand. Over this time a lot of reflection had been going on to develop a new theology that explained the life of Jesus. Moreover Luke was writing in the 80's CE, fifty years after the ministry of Jesus and thirty years after Paul.

As he wrote, Luke was doing his own interpretation. This interpretation would have been influenced by the writings of Paul, the first Christian theologian. In *Acts* Luke shows the vital contribution of Paul to the emerging church. He also presents himself as being part of Paul's mission in the "we" passages e.g. Acts 16:10-17.

In a Section A in the opening passages of the book of *Acts*, Luke describes the early and arguably "heady" days of the Church's beginnings. In this way there is a similarity with the opening of Luke and Matthew's gospels which about a new beginning.

⁵⁰ Carl R. Holladay, *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament: Interpreting the Message and Meaning of Jesus Christ* (Nashville: Abingdon Press, 2005) 382-383.

Some of the parallels between the start of Acts and the end of Luke's gospel are again shown below, this time with references.

LAUNCH THE SOCIETY

As in the Acts of the Apostles

SECTION A

INTRO TO IDENTITY AND THE RE-TRACING OF STEPS

Acts 1:1-6:8

Narrative at the end of Luke

Refs

Judas betrays	21:6
Supper room	22:12
Mountain of olives	22:39
2 men shining robes	24:4
Hoping to redeem Israel	24:21
Begin from Jerusalem	24:27
Jesus withdrew	24:50

Narrative at the start of Acts

Jesus taken up to heaven	1:2
"Stay in Jerusalem"	1:4
Restore Israel	1:6
2 men shining robes	1:10

Olive grove	1:12
Upper room	1:13
Judas betrays	1:16

Acts' Section B

Recognise Outside Autonomy

Section B of *Acts* provides a narrative of efforts that were made in the early Church to follow the command of Jesus to “go out into all the world” (Mt 28:19). Luke is mindful that immediately after the life of Jesus the majority of his followers were Jews. How were these early followers to begin their “outreach”?

In such a social setting and if (as argued here) Luke is developing his text at a logico-semantic level, it is credible that he would use examples of early “outreach” to link together the paragraphs of his Section B. An emphasis here would be on showing how the church leadership recognised authenticity within people who were outside of Judaism. A suggested outline is as follows:

SECTION B RECOGNISE OUTSIDE AUTONOMY

Acts 6:8-11:25

Beyond religious law system	Location	Disciple and ‘outsider’
Power is in the Person (not a ..) 6:8-8:3	Outside Jerusalem	Stephen and Saul

Separation of spiritual favour 8:4-25	Samaria	Philip & Samaritans
Inter-racial 8:26-40	Ethiopia	Philip & Ethiopian
Power outside of priests 9:1-31	Damascus	Ananias & Saul
Movement promoted 9:32-34	Lydda	Peter & Aeneas
Oriented towards re-birth 9:35-43	Joppa	Peter & Dorcas
Inter-cultural 10:1-48	Caesarea	Peter & Cornelius
Readiness to adjust 11:1-1-18	Jerusalem	Peter & ones of circumcision
Mutual financial support 11:19-29	Antioch	Barnabas, Paul & 'Christians'

Christians at Antioch sending alms to elders in Judea.. cf. Acts 11:25

This Section B appears to end with what is described as “reverse mission”, that is, the people to whom an outreach had been made, are now reaching back in order to encourage and support the original missionaries.

Luke's Section C in Acts

Cope with Opposition to Outside Reach

At the same logico-semantic level, one could expect that the historical outreach made to people outside Judaism would meet with opposition. Such opposition appears to provide a framework for a Section C as follows:

SECTION C

COPE WITH OPPOSITION TO OUTREACH

Acts 12:1 - 15:29

Paragraph "Hooks" are those
who Oppose New Conversions

Coping Response	Opposer	Likely Motive of Opposer
1. Power through prayer <i>12:1-23</i>	Herod	Politics
2. Power through truth <i>12:24-13:12</i>	Sorcerer	Monetary
3. Material independence <i>13:13-52</i>	The Jews	Influence amongst wealthy
4. Perception to escape <i>14:1-6</i>	The disobeying Jews	Crowd influence
5. Stress on humanness <i>14:7-18</i>	Crowds	Adulation
6. Brotherly support <i>14:19-28</i>	Iconium Jews	Desire for

7. Salvation through grace <i>15:1-29</i>	Some of the Pharisee sect	leadership Sect control
--	------------------------------	----------------------------

This ends with

**Apostles and elder brothers sending reduced rules
throughout Antioch, Syria and Cilicia (15:29)**

The Council of Jerusalem a “pivot” in the story of *Acts*

Section C above concludes in *Acts* 15 with the Council of Jerusalem and its determination. In order to further explore the logico-semantic level of *Acts* it is necessary to dwell on the significance of this Council. To a large extent its decisions can explain why, in the sections to follow, Luke was exploring definitions such as “the Word” and he was endorsing the authority that lies within the wide range of people. In fact the later Sections of D and E in *Acts* help to provide an “undergirding” for the democratic institutions of Hellenism while at the same time endorsing the theology of the early church.

Such definitions were needed, because at the Council (it is argued in these pages), the emerging Church incorporated essential elements of Hellenism into the fabric of Christianity. How so?

In Part One of this whole research project *Is Christian Morality Unique?* the Jerusalem Council and its implications were dealt with at some length. Some of the points made in Part One are being repeated here as a prelude to further exploration of the logico-semantic level of *Acts*.

It was at the Jerusalem Council described in *Acts* 15 that the emerging Church needed to sort out what its morality rules should be, when Gentiles joined the church. At the time such rules were an extremely divisive issue. Conflict about them almost split the Church. It seems Paul was caught between the two streams of morality. On the one hand he calls out the laxity of Hellenistic Corinthians “You should be ashamed...” (1 Cor.15:34). On the other hand, he also calls out the legalism of Galatians cf. “O foolish Galatians...”(Gal.3:1).

Chapter Fifteen in *Acts* begins by telling how influential leaders with a Jewish background had been wanting Gentile converts to undergo circumcision and adopt all the minutiae of regulations that were (in theory) practiced by mainstream Jews (*Acts* 15:10). But a ruling from the Council that favoured circumcision and the many rules within Judaism, would keep the movement of a following of Jesus within Judaism and would be against their mandate. How could a ruling retain an emphasis on the commandments and also allow the church to move out into the whole world as commissioned by Jesus? (cf. Mt 28:19).

In Luke’s *Acts* 15, as a master narrator, Luke gives an optimistic view of what happened. Actually his picture is a little over-optimistic. We know from Paul’s letter to the *Galatians* that the issue of circumcision and law observance continued to be an on-going problem (cf. Gal. 2:11-13). In fact judging by Paul’s letter to the Galatians it appears that some of the people (including Peter and Barnabas) who attended the Council actually went back on what the Council had decreed. They were supposed to welcome Gentile membership on an equal footing. But Peter and others were eating apart from the Gentile converts (Gal 2:11-13).

To put this in context. Scholars still argue about whether or not the Jerusalem Council was before or after the *Galatians*

letter.⁵¹ If the Council and its edict was after the confrontation in *Galatians* it may have helped heal some of the division. But this edict was still not likely to entirely resolve the issue. Also Paul refers to a trip to Jerusalem about the issue (Gal.2). This suggests the Council was before the confrontation.

Within the story of the Council as told in *Acts* 15, Paul and Barnabas attended as delegates from Antioch (a city in Galatia). They recounted the many conversions being made amongst Gentiles. Peter (the leader designated by Jesus) stood up and spoke on the topic of Jewish observance of rules. He pointed out that neither he, nor many of the people present, were observing all the Jewish rules because these were so tedious. Why therefore he asked, should they be imposed on Gentile converts? (*Acts* 15:10). James who was now the apparent leader of the Church, gave a speech that recalled “the prophet”. In doing this, he was quoting the prophet Amos who had railed against unjust business practices (*Acts* 15:15-16). James then proposed that the Gentiles members be obliged to refrain from “fornication, blood and strangling” (*Acts* 15:29).

This “formula” for membership appeared to solve the problem of membership (at least according to Luke’s account). But there were layers to the meaning in this edict of *Acts* 15:20. At one level the edict was parallel to rules that had already been prescribed in the Old Testament book of *Leviticus* cf:

“Anyone, native or stranger.. must pour out its blood” 17:13
(the blood of an animal)

“You must not give your marriage bed to your neighbour’s wife” 18:26

“You must not steal nor deal deceitfully or fraudulently with your neighbour.” 19:11

⁵¹ Cf, Murphy O’Connor, *Paul: A Critical Life*, (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1996), 51.

For centuries these rules had already been applied to non-Jewish people who wanted to live within the boundaries of Judaism in Israel. On that level of Leviticus, the “Conservatives” at the Council could hardly object because the Council’s ruling reinforced their insistence of keeping with established tradition. Luke’s account of the Council says “all approved” (Acts 15:25).

If Paul’s letter to the Galatians on the other hand was written **after** the Council of Galatians “we went to Jerusalem,” (cf. Gal. 2:1) the *Leviticus* meaning of the edict may be what some people were thinking of when they left the Council. They were thinking that the Gentile followers of Jesus were now in some sort of “co-existence” relationship with the Judaic followers of Jesus. It would then have seemed quite reasonable for them to eat apart from the Gentile converts, which after all was required by Jewish law cf. Acts 10:11.

Whether the Council was before or after the confrontation, Paul saw things quite differently. He had remained affected by his conversion experience in which Jesus identified in his person with all of his followers. In this sense, they together formed a corporate organism. This organic existence was celebrated and reinforced most particularly at the Eucharist in which all shared in the one body of Christ. As Paul said later in Romans 2:11 “God has no favourites.”

In his teaching Paul had continually promised that all of the followers of Jesus would share in the resurrected life of Jesus (1 Cor. 15:1-29). He therefore insisted that all the followers of Jesus, Jews and Gentiles alike, should share in the Eucharistic celebration as equals. They should also all share in the same, corporate practice of morality.

In Part One of this research project *Is Christian Morality Unique? Part 1*, it was shown over some chapters how Paul

put particular focus on the three commandments of “Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal.” A close look at the structure of the text in Chapter Fifteen in *Acts* shows how it was that Paul could understand and interpret the Council’s prohibition against “fornication, blood and strangling.” (*Acts* 15:29). With Paul’s understanding of the threefold edict of Council, morality was being interpreted in terms of the commandments. At the same time the “bar” of observance of these commandments was being raised. Thus a prohibition against “fornication” could apply to all uncommitted sexual intercourse and not just to participation in pagan temple fertility rites (cf. “Thou shalt not commit adultery”). As regards “blood”, the wider context of publicly endorsed cruelty in the Roman Empire, was being taken into account. Paul for instance was well aware of and admitted his fear of the blood letting that went on in the arenas of Ephesus etc. (1 Cor 15:32). The Council’s prohibition against “blood” could therefore have implied a prohibition against cruelty as such (cf. “Thou shalt not kill.”). Within the discussions of the Jerusalem Council, James’ quote of “the prophet” in *Acts* 15:29 from *Amos* chapter nine was a reminder of *Amos*’ protests against the “strangling” of the poor through unjust business practices (*Amos* 2:6-7). Thus implied that reference to the commandment “thou shalt not steal”, was now being extended to unfairness as such in business dealing.

The following of Jesus for both Jews and Gentiles, alike involved a “raising of the bar” of the Commandments. In this sense there was a move beyond them. The commandments were in a sense “idealised”.

A morality interpretation of the Council’s edicts, rather than a dietary one, fits with early accounts of the Council in ancient texts.⁵² These texts show that there was an early

⁵² Ernst Haenchen, *The Acts of the Apostles: A Commentary* (Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1971), Intro.

understanding the Council's edicts went beyond dietary laws and they included an interpretation of the commandments.⁵³

A Formula for Christian Morality

Luke considered that the Jerusalem Council now equipped Paul with a morality "formula". Rather than being 'bogged down' with Jewish rituals and regulations, the Gentile converts and indeed all the followers of Jesus would now be challenged instead to set their sights on "raising the bar" of the three commandments about money, power and relationship. The "formula" was closely linked in with "the way" of the followers of Jesus. Early on in Acts Paul had confessed that he had no end of trouble trying to help people understand "the way" cf. Acts 19:21. When he was accused of being a 'ringleader' of the Nazarene sect in Acts 24:5 he said in Acts 24:14 he was rather, a follower of "the way".

A morality interpretation of the Council edicts helps to explain the structure of *Acts* in the Sections to follow Section C of *Acts* (according to this analysis). It also shows a Church endorsement of the rationalism and idealism upon which the Hellenism of the Greco-Roman Empire functioned. At the same time there was a continued insistence on observance of the key social commandments of Judaism.

The commandments were being "idealised" by "raising the bar" of their observance. This move "beyond" the commandments provided a challenge to help the self-determination of all people (cf. "Thou shalt not kill"). The move provided a challenge to reinforce basic social structures (cf. "Thou shalt not commit adultery"). It also provided a challenge to provide all people with the basic necessities of life

⁵³ Haenchen, *The Acts of the Apostles...*, Intro.

(cf. “Thou shalt not steal”). Arguably these three edicts are at the base of the modern industrialised world of today.

After *Acts* 15 the narrative centres around the mission of Paul to the Greco-Roman Empire.

Section D of *Acts*

Heed Multiple Voices and the Living Word

At the logico-semantic level of the structure of *Acts*, Luke continues on with the themes of his gospel and the sociological understanding that he was developing in these two books. In his gospel he had already demonstrated the “best practice” of a society that is based upon the Greek culture of Hellenism (cf. Sections B and C). In *Acts* he goes on to provide an understanding of “the voice of the people” which is at the base of Greek democracy (cf. *Acts* 15:30-20:32). Luke shows how ultimately, such a voice reaches back into the “word” of God.

In his Section D in *Acts*, therefore and at the textual level, he uses a wide range of words to describe the “voice” of the people. This in itself demonstrates that such a “voice” comes from a wide range of perspectives. The original words that Luke used are of course in Greek. But the following translated list of some of these words, show how he attempts to provide a comprehensive understanding of “voice” and therefore the “word”. Some of the repetitions are also given here.

Exhortation	Urged	Persuaded	Evangelise
Speech	Practising	Command	Spoke
Confirmed	soothsaying	Addressed	Dismissed
Teaching	Urged	Being spoken	Exulted
Preaching	Charge	Scoffed	Announced

Announced	Commanded	Witnessing	Said
Witnessed to	Charging	Blaspheming	Reported
Decrees	Praying	Bidding	Proclaims\
Speak	Praised	Confirming	Besought
Beseeching	Called	Spoke boldly	saying
			Lectured
			etc.

SECTION D

HEED MULTIPLE VOICES AND THE LIVING WORD

Acts 15:30 - 20:31

Paragraph "Hooks" are references
to the Word of God

Steps towards the "Living Word"

*Paragraph Ref
and Verse Ref to
the "Word"*

1. .The "**word**" is taught and preached by
manv 15:30-35
.. *Paul and Barnabas . .teaching and preaching . .* 15:35
2. . The "**word**" continues to live on with 15:36-41
.. *let us visit . .(where) . we announced the word .* 16:33
3. .Speaking the "**word**" is permitted by 16:1-16:10
.. *prevented by - Holy Spirit to speak - word in* 16:6
4. . The "**word**" is spoken to those ready 16:11-40
.. *Believe . . and they spoke to him the word of God* 16:32
5. . The "**word**" is received by people who 17:1-34
.. *and these were more noble . . who received the* 17:11
6. . The "**word**" has opponents 17:13-34
.. *announced by Paul the word of God, they (Jews)* 17:13
7. . The "**word**" urges proclamation 18:1-6

...Paul was urged by the word to solemnly witness	18:5
8. . Teaching the " word " is commanded	18:7-23
.. said . Lord . speak and not keep silence . I am	18:11
9. . The " word " expects attention	18:24-19:10
.. some hardened and disobeyed, (others) came to	19:9
10. The " word " is increased and	19:11-20
.. by might of the Lord the word increased and was	19:20
11. . The " word " is linked in with "the	19:21-41
. no small amount of trouble concerning 'the way'	19:23
12. . The " word " continues the work of "I	20:1-38
.. I commend you to the Lord and to the word of	20:32

The Section ends with:

**Paul being escorted to the ship by a range of people to
journey to Jerusalem then Rome**

In each of the above paragraphs, where “the word” is considered to be a paragraph “hook”, a paragraph forms comfortably around such a “hook”. These paragraphs provide a description of what “the word” is. The one exception here amongst the paragraphs, which appears to ‘prove the rule’, is found in paragraph eleven. Here there is an apparent paragraph but no mention of “the word”. However when one considers the subject matter of the paragraph, it is found this is about “the loud voice”. According to the narrative in this paragraph, someone had organised a riot in which there was loud shouting. It appears from Luke’s avoidance of reference to “the word” in such a context. he is showing the presence of “the word” does not co-exist with the “loud voice”.

As an aside, recall how in recent and present history, the propaganda of totalitarian regimes attempts to snuff out the

presence of “the word”. For instance some concentration camps have loud speakers blaring all day with the “party line”.

It appears paragraph eleven in this section of *Acts* Luke mentions “the way” as a substitute “hook”. This is also a reminder that “the way” is linked in with the presence of “the word”.

Section E of *Acts*

Recognise Authority in the Range of Figures

The narrative in *Acts* continues on to narrate the adventures of Paul and the many obstacles he encountered. In Section E it appears Luke is showing how a whole range of people exercised their own sphere of authority in helping Paul. They do this in terms of what they say.

SECTION E

RECOGNISE THE RANGE OF AUTHORITY

Acts 21:1 – 26:32

**Paragraph "Hooks" are parties who promote the
Power of One (Paul)**

	Authority Figure	Names	Assistance given
1.	Disciples <i>21:1-6</i>	Disciples, women, children, brothers	Accompanied

2.	Prophets <i>21:7-14</i>	Philip's daughters & Agabus	Warned
3.	Church leadership <i>21:15-26</i>	Ancient disciples and James and elders	Required purification
4.	Law-enforcers <i>21:27-39</i>	Chillarch of the cohort	Protected
5.	The people <i>21:39-22:23</i>	The crowd	Challenged
6.	State Law <i>22:24-29</i>	Re rights of citizens	Imposed respect
7.	Religious leadership <i>22:30-23:10</i>	Chief priests and all the council	Provided forum
8.	Kith and kin <i>23:11-24</i>	Son of Paul's sister	Gave secret help
9.	The Governor <i>23:25-24:27</i>	Felix	Gave on-going protection
10.	The Successor <i>25:1-7</i>	Festus	Weighed up case
11,	The Emperor <i>25:8-12</i>	Caesar	Provided base for world outreach
12.	Monarchy <i>25:13-26:32</i>	Agrippa & Bernice	Gave a hearing

Paul to Caesar at Rome 26:32

Section E finishes with Paul en route to Rome where he hopes to put his case to the Roman Emperor himself. He wants to explain to the Emperor that he is not trying to undermine Judaism (or for that matter, Hellenism). In the narrative he continues to be a prisoner of the Romans, largely for his own protection.

In the final section, Section F, Paul behaviour reminds us of the “Kingdom Figure” that Luke has described in the Section E of his gospel. Thus even as a prisoner, he functions within and indeed contributes to the secular society around him.



Section F of Acts

Challenge the Power Base of the World

SECTION F

CHALLENGE POWER BASE OF THE WORLD

Acts 27:1 – 28-31

Paragraph "Hooks" are references to the Centurion

Authority Figure (Centurion)	Background
1. Kingdom figure sets sail under secular law enforcer <i>27:1-5</i>	"we" set sail for Italy
2. Kingdom figure offers advice <i>27:6-10</i>	"now dangerous"
3. Law enforcer refuses Kingdom figure's advice <i>27:11-29</i>	he took wrong advice and shipwreck -

- | | | |
|----|---|--|
| 4. | Law enforcer heeds
Kingdom figure's warning
<i>27:30-41</i> | Centurion
forbids the
killing of |
| 5. | Law enforcer saves
Kingdom figure
<i>27:42-28:10</i> | Paul's
'internalised
law' accepted |
| 6 | Law enforcer accepts
internalised law
<i>28:11-31</i> | Paul's
'internalised
law' accepted |

Paul in Rome proclaiming the kingdom (to the world) 28:31

At a metaphoric level, one could wonder if Luke uses the storm in the lengthy narrative of Section F to provide a description of the Church's efforts to define itself in the years that stretched from the life of Jesus in the 30's CE up until the time of the gospel and *Acts* (around 85 CE). In many ways the Church was required to weather a storm during the first century.

D Inferred References to the Hybrid Nature of Christianity

The above pages demonstrate that the synoptic gospels of Mark, Matthew and Luke as also Luke's *Acts of the Apostles* follow a logico-semantic level of construction. In doing this they provide a sociological explanation of Christianity. They show the basic social structure of the gospels and therefore

Christianity is a hybrid that consists of Judaism and Hellenism. They also show how the world view of Judaism is based on the sense of time (and law). The world view of Hellenism is based on the sense of place (and order). They sit with each other, but not very comfortably.

In an obvious sense, these two world views are complementary to each other. Yet they are also distinctly different. Inevitably there is tension between them. This tension carries over to the personality “type” of each, that is, the disciple of Matthew’s gospel and the Kingdom Figure of Luke. One could expect that at times the tension between the two would break out into open conflict. On the other hand one could hope that the dialectical tension between the two world views, would provide energy to the whole. In an on-going way the one society would be constantly critical of the excesses of the other.

At the historical level of Christian societies, it could be argued that there has been a constant struggle for dominance between the two world views and their personality types. There has therefore been and continues to be, an oscillation between them.



CHAPTER TWO

THE CREDIBILITY FACTOR

A THE CONTRADICTORY POSITION OF CURRENT NEW TESTAMENT SCHOLARSHIP

At the very start of this Research Project, in fact in the opening sentence the difficulty of doing a sociological analysis of the gospels was mentioned. The opening tells how the project was started after the fourth separate and unsuccessful attempt to find a Biblical Studies Supervisor for a Ph D thesis.⁵⁴

Part of the background to this opening is as follows. A sociological analysis of the gospels and Acts was worked out using semiotic analysis. But the analysis generally met with a “blanket of disinterest” at the local level. It was thought there was a credibility block with regards to the analysis and receptivity towards it would be improved if a Ph D thesis was written to demonstrate its viability. However upon sending a copy of the analysis to a New Testament scholar at a Melbourne University the reply came back that this material did not fit into the category of New Testament studies at all. It in fact it fitted into the discipline of Sociology of Religion.

A professor qualified in Sociology of Religion was then found at another university and was prepared to help, on condition a secondary supervisor in New Testament Studies was also found. This did not happen. Arguably people approached were thinking much the same thing as the first New Testament scholar approached, that is, the analysis (insofar as they looked

⁵⁴ Michelle Nailon *Is Christian Morality Unique? Part 1, A focus on Money, Power and Relationship* (Melbourne: Project Employment 2018), www.realitysearch.com.au p.1 [accessed Oct 2019].

at it) did not fit into the discipline of New Testament Studies. Academics appeared to be equating New Testament Studies with the use of Historical Critical Exegesis.

There is a contradiction here.

The Catholic Pontifical Commission, in its article “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church” says:

No scientific method for the study of the Bible is fully adequate to comprehend the biblical texts in all their richness. For all its overall validity, the historical-critical method cannot claim to be totally sufficient in this respect. It necessarily has to leave aside many aspects of the writings which it studies.⁵⁵

The Commission goes on to describe synchronic (as distinct from diachronic) approaches to New Testament interpretation. These include rhetorical analysis, narrative analysis and semiotic analysis. The Commission encouraged the use of human sciences approaches to interpretation such as a sociological, cultural anthropology, psychological and psychoanalytical approaches. Of the sociological approach, it says “In the course of the last 20 years (1970-1990), the sociological approach to biblical texts has become an integral part of exegesis.” However it would seem this is not the universal case! So on the one hand the Commission promotes semiotic analysis and a sociological approach in the interpretation of the New Testament.⁵⁶ But on the other hand such an analysis and approach is dismissed as not fitting into New Testament studies at all.

Contradictions aside, it might be validly asked if the findings of a semiotic analysis and sociological approach as outlined above, are likely to be accepted as being credible. The main

⁵⁵ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation..” 502.

⁵⁶ Pontifical Biblical Commission, “The Interpretation..” 506.

finding of the analysis is that Christianity is in fact a hybrid society. If this finding is the case, inferences to such structures should be found in both Church teaching and in general interpretations of the gospels. A proponent of the analysis would need to admit these references are few.

However inferences about the existence of the hybrid nature of Christianity do exist both within the New Testament and within contemporary writings. Three instances of this are as follows:

1. The letters of Paul teach that the “body of Christ” consists of a hybrid.

- (a) In *Romans 11* he uses the image of an olive tree. He talks of the Gentiles as people coming from a wild olive tree and they have been grafted onto a cultivated olive tree (Judaism). He talks of Jews who lack faith as breaking away from such a tree but (they are) people who could be ‘grafted’ back onto the tree. He also reckons that the presence of Gentiles who are now “on the tree” are of benefit to the whole. “ so all Israel will be saved” (Rom 11: 26).
- (b) Consider again a quote from the letter to the Ephesians. *Ephesians* may have been written after Paul’s death but traditionally, the letter has been considered to be in the Pauline tradition.⁵⁷

Now, in union with Christ Jesus, you who used to be far away have been brought near by the death of Christ. For Christ himself has brought us peace, by making the Jews and Gentiles one people. With his own body he broke down the wall that separated them and kept them enemies. He abolished the Jewish Law, with its commandments

⁵⁷ Carl R. Holladay, *A Critical Introduction*, 382-383.

and rules, in order to create out of the two races one new people in union with himself, in this way making peace. By his death on the cross Christ destroyed the enmity; by means of the cross he united both races into one body and brought them back to God. (Eph 2:13-16).⁵⁸

2. Another inference about the hybrid nature of Christianity can be found in contemporary biblical scholarship. Francis J. Moloney for instance, implies this in an article called “The gifts of the Holy Spirit”. Reflecting on the interaction between Jesus and Nicodemus in John 3:2,3 Moloney explains that within Christianity there is a co’existence of people who come from differing world views⁵⁹

In order to enter the Christian community, one must cross the road from **either the Jewish Synagogue or the Gentile Temple, and enter the new community of Jesus Christ** through a Baptism that is an external rite marked by the pouring of water (‘born again’), and a gift which is the spirit (‘born from above’).....This biblical ‘journey’, made possible by God’s gift of the spirit through the waters of Baptism, took place at the beginning of a longer, and even more challenging journey: a lifelong imitation of the way of Jesus.

One can gather from the above quotation that after baptism and into the future, Christian people would need to continue coming towards an imitation of Jesus from a background that is based on either the “Jewish Synagogue” or the “Gentile Temple”. In this sense therefore, at baptism they come from a

⁵⁸ *The Jerusalem Bible: New Testament* ed. Alexander Jones (London: Darton, Longman & Todd, 1967).

⁵⁹ Francis J. Moloney, “The Gifts of the Holy Spirit” in *Melbourne Catholic*, editor David Halliday (Melbourne: Archbishop Peter A. Comensali., Dec 2018).

model of society that is “outside” Christianity. At the same time, over the whole of their lives, they still need to continue the journey of coming from an “outside” model of society towards Jesus, because their social roots are in a sense, on the “outside”.

One can gather from the above quote that baptised Christians cannot make the assumption that after baptism they are now naturally and securely rooted in a mid position between these two types of societies. Their journey to a mid-point is ongoing. Moloney infers, that the text of John 3:2,3 that the quote is based upon, is not just referring to the contemporary situation in Palestine in the 30’s CE or even that of the writer around 100 CE.⁶⁰ Rather, as a text of revelation, John’s gospel has a contemporary application as well.⁶¹

3. A third instance of the existence of a hybrid type of society within a Judaic-Christian society is reflected in a recent apostolic letter *Rejoice and Be Glad*, written by Pope Francis and also in his homilies.⁶² He talks about two major forms of heresy that people can tip into.

CONTEMPORARY GNOSTICISM

36.Gnosticism presumes “a purely subjective faith whose only interest is a certain experience or a set of ideas and bits of information which are meant to console and enlighten, but which ultimately keep one imprisoned in his or her own thoughts and feelings....They think of the intellect as separate from the flesh, and thus become incapable of touching Christ’s suffering flesh in others, locked up as they

⁶⁰ Cf. Ben Stevens, “When was the Gospel of John Written?” in <https://www.quora.com/When-was-the-Gospel-of-John-written/> (Mountain Village, California: Quora Inc.) [Accessed 30 Sept 2019].

⁶¹ Cf. Hans-Georg Gadamer, *Truth and Method*, trans J. Weinsheimer and D. G. Marshall (London: Bloomsbury, 2013). xxv.

⁶² Pope Francis, *Rejoice and Be Glad: on the call to holiness in today’s world*, Encyclical Letter 2018.

are in in an encyclopaedia of abstractions. In the end, by disembodiment the mystery, they prefer “a God without Christ, a Christ without the Church, a Church without her people”.^[36]³⁹... They absolutize their own theories and force others to submit to their way of thinking. ^[39] Gnosticism is one of the most sinister ideologies ^[40] ⁶³

In the above quotes there are echoes of Paul’s dealings with the *pneumatikoi* in his letter of 1 *Corinthians*. These people were discussed in Part 1 of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* Like the Greek Stoics they believed themselves to possess a divine spark as part of themselves.

Consider the second critique by Pope Francis:

NEW PELAGIANISM

This can occur when some groups of Christians give excessive importance to certain rules, customs or ways of acting. This may well be a subtle form of pelagianism, for it appears to subject the life of grace to certain human structures.^[58]Once we believe that everything depends on human effort as channelled by ecclesial rules and structures, we unconsciously complicate the Gospel and become enslaved to a blueprint that leaves few openings for the working of grace. Saint Thomas Aquinas reminded us that the precepts added to the Gospel by the Church should be imposed with moderation “lest the conduct of the faithful become burdensome”, for then our religion would become a form of servitude.^[64] ⁶⁴

⁶³ Cf. Pope Francis “*Homily at Mass in Casa Santa Marta*”, 11 November 2016 : *L’Osservatore Romano*, editor Andrea Mondo (Rome: Vatican City State, 12 November 2016), p. 8.

⁶⁴ Cf. Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologiae*, I-II, q. 107, art. 4. (Venetiis: Cudebat Simon Occhi, 1787).

There are parallels here between the description that the Pope gives of people who over-rely on rules and regulations and the problems that were faced in Matthew community in 85 CE. This problem is reflected in Section E of the analysis above of Matthew “Avoid over-stress on External law.” Also, recall Paul’s anger as shown in 1 Galatians about over-stress on external law such as circumcision. In the Galatian context, Jewish regulations were being imposed upon Gentile converts and Paul railed against such “threats” to their freedom and self-determination (Gal. 2:4).

In conclusion, writings attributed to Paul, recent biblical studies and current church teaching, all reflect an understanding that Christianity is based upon both a Judaic world view and a Hellenistic/Greek philosophy world view. Both these world views can be taken to extremes. They both affect the practice of Christian morality and are a prescription for tension between them.

A Blanket of Disinterest

Unfortunately demonstrations such as the above, of a co-existence of world views within Christianity are of limited value, if the mainstream Church remains “disinterested” in them. A few examples of the disinterest are as follows:

An educationalist was shown a book with the headings of a semiotic analysis of the gospels *On Building a Society* (cf. www.onbuildingasociety.org). She turned to the back cover of the book and page by page came through it backwards, saying as she did so “I can’t make head or tail of this.” Another educationalist was given a copy of the analysis in the hope of obtaining some feedback. The suggestion came back “Do a feminist analysis.” (?). Another example of disinterest is as follows. It was thought the RealitySearch analysis may be of

interest to schools so a web site with workshops on the analysis of Mark's gospel was set up. At the time there were about 2,000 unique visitors coming into the RealitySearch web sites each month. A flyer was made of the new workshop site and this was sent out to a hundred Religious Coordinators around Victoria. It was thought people would open the Australia post letter with the flyer in it when they were seated in front of their computer. Little effort therefore would be needed to open up at the site's home page as shown in the flyer. But a couple of weeks later, according to the Awstats, only about two unique visitors from Australia had at that time, gone into the site.

Why the "blanket of disinterest"? a few clues might come from a 1967 book called *The Medium is the Message*.⁶⁵ This book by Marshall McLuhan pointed out that because of the rapid changes in technology with the advent of television etc. the new mediums of communication had themselves become "the message". It was largely because of the shifts in such mediums that so many people were undergoing what Alvin Toffler described as "future shock" in his 1970 book called *Future Shock*.⁶⁶ The two books were written before the advent of computerisation and the internet. Today the digital world has now become "the message" more than ever. The relevance of McLuhan's book to the present discussion is that word processing can isolate out slabs of the gospel texts and "juggle them around" in a search for a logico-semantic level. However people who have grown up with the set, linear-printed book of the gospels would find such a "juggling around" of paragraphs foreign to them. In such case, "the medium has become the blockage". Oddly enough the "juggling around" of stories with word processing has parallels with the practice of oral performance in the 1st century CE. as

⁶⁵ Marshall McLuhan, *The Medium is the Message* (UK: Penguin Books, 1967).

⁶⁶ Alvin Toffler, *Future Shock* (US: Random House, 1970).

described by Antoinette Clark Wire in her book *The Case for Mark Composed in Performance*.⁶⁷

Another possible and indeed likely cause of the disinterest in a semiotic analysis of the gospels is the ongoing dominance of the method of historical critical exegesis in the mainstream interpretation of the gospels. It appears scholars and editors tend to sit within this discipline of Historical-Critical exegesis and they consider other approaches to biblical interpretation are outside their sphere of interest. As noted above a semiotic analysis with a sociology approach is categorised as “sociology of religion” and not New Testament Studies.

With this apparent bias in mind there is need to weigh up the limitations of the historical critical exegesis approach further. It appears it is only in this way that a semiotic analysis can be seen in its correct perspective. The German philosopher Gadamer has pointed out the limitations of historic-critical exegesis in the interpretation of Scripture. A somewhat lengthy précis of his book *Truth and Method* is to follow.



⁶⁷ Antoinette Clark Wire, *The Case for Mark Composed in Performance*, in *Biblical Performance Criticism* 3. (Eugene Oregon: Cascade Books, 2011).

scholarship throughout the world.⁷⁵ Kittel's ideas reflected a belief that the Jews were no longer of relevance to the world. Therefore allowing them to continue to function in public office would be a "retrograde step" for civilisation.⁷⁶ Such ideas were seminal to the conflict of World War II in which it is estimated seventy million people died.⁷⁷

The academic output of Gadamer in 1960 apparently roused the interest of Pope John Paul II, who had also lived within the realm of the Nazis. When Gadamer died at the age of 102 in 2002 his family received a telegram of condolence from John Paul II.⁷⁸ John Paul's close collaborator, Cardinal Ratzinger, chaired the Catholic Pontifical Commission when it produced the statement of "The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church (1993). Ratzinger was to become Pope Benedict XVI.

Gadamer's critique of the limitations of natural science as compared with the human sciences applies to an over-emphasis on Historical Critical Exegesis and its "scientific method" in the interpretation of Scripture. Gadamer was a major proponent instead of "philosophical hermeneutics" which is mentioned and endorsed in the Commission's statement, cf.

The historical-critical method, in fact, cannot lay claim to enjoying a monopoly in this area. It must be conscious of its limits, as well as of the dangers to which it is exposed. Recent developments in philosophical hermeneutics.... have shed light upon many aspects of the problem of interpretation that the historical-critical method has tended to ignore."⁷⁹

⁷⁵ Wayne A. Meeks, "A Nazi New Testament Professor Reads His Bible: The Strange Case of Gerhard Kittel" in *The Idea of Biblical Interpretation: Essays in Honor of James L. Kugel*, ed. Hindy Najman and Judith H Newman (Leiden: Boston: Brill, 2004), 513-541

⁷⁶ Meeks, "A Nazi New Testament Professor Reads His Bible: 533.

⁷⁷ Note cf. Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/World_War_II_casualties.

⁷⁸ Lawn, *Gadamer, A Guide...*, 17.

⁷⁹ Pontifical Commission, "The Interpretation...."524.

**(ii) An underlying Critique
of Historical Critical Exegesis**

In the book *Truth and Method*, published in 1960, Gadamer avoids both the word Nazism and an explicit discussion of religion. He does briefly mention the “method” of Historical Critical Exegesis however and gives a short critique of it. For instance on page 334 he says

Legal hermeneutics was separated from theory of understanding as a whole because it has a dogmatic purpose, just as, by giving up its dogmatic commitment, theological hermeneutics was united with philological historical method (Note: that is, Historical Critical Exegesis).

Such a brief mention of the “method” of “philological historical method” almost disguises the fact that the critique of this method is aligned with the central theme of the book.

As a philosopher Gadamer had a special interest in the philosophers of ancient Greece. During the 1930’s and 40’s with the rise of Nazism and the general adoption of philosophies such as that of Hegel and Nietzsche, he would have been comparing these ideas with those of the ancient Greeks, namely those of Plato and Aristotle. He was also conscious the prevailing philosophy was heavily influenced by the German Enlightenment.⁸⁰

⁸⁰ Cf. Gadamer, *Truth and Method*, 28.

(iii) *Truth and Method* compared with the Themes of Time and Place in Matthew and Luke

It is said that Gadamer's book *Truth and Method* is difficult to follow. In his book *Gadamer, a Guide for the Perplexed* Chris Lawn says his work is "long and desultory but his arguments are clearly stated".⁸¹ Ironically enough, the semiotic analysis of the synoptic gospels, outlined in pages above, helps to clarify and simplify Gadamer's basic position.

Recall that Matthew describes a society that is based upon law. Natural law is observed in terms of the causes and effects that are taking place within the frameworks of time. Also human laws are regulated according to likely causes and effects that also take place within the framework of time. In the analysis above, it was shown that Matthew was mindful of this connection between law and time. He opens most paragraphs with expressions of time. He knits the Sections of his gospel together with the time statement, "After Jesus had said these things". Matthew also sets out to show Jesus emerged from the heritage of Judaism, a law/time based society.

At much the same time, around 85 CE, Luke was writing his gospel from within a Hellenistic society. As distinct from Matthew, Luke uses expressions of place and the sense of direction in the organisation of his material especially in his lengthy Section B. Luke divides up his six major sections according to the journey of Jesus towards Jerusalem. In his second book of *Acts* he structures his material more loosely but this is also organised around a journey – this time the journey of Paul towards Rome.

Like Matthew, Luke sets out the qualities needed by an individual and then a group, to function effectively in the type

⁸¹ Lawn, *Gadamer, A Guide* ..., 26.

of society that he is describing. In Luke's case this is a place and order-based society that reflects the Hellenism of the Greco-Roman Empire in the first century CE. Like Matthew, Luke lists inadequacies of the society he is describing. In Luke's society there is a tendency for people to downplay the lessons of the past and live instead in the "now". There is also a tendency to over-emphasise rationalism, idealism and the "loud voice". .

In a general "sweep" of the two types of societies as described in the gospels one could say that a law-based society has a heavy emphasis on time. An order-based society has a heavy emphasis on place and the control of space. Because Matthew and Luke were describing such societies in the abstract, their descriptions of the good and bad points of these societies can be translated into another time and place, such as the situation of Germany in the twentieth century.

In the early C20th there were the Jewish ghettos in Europe. In contrast to these there were philosophies of the Enlightenment which had parallels with the Hellenism of the C1st CE. They had an emphasis on "the now" rather than on history and tradition. They were deficient in the sense of time.

An interesting exercise to demonstrate the need for a Hellenistic-type of society to "build in" a sense of time, would be to look again at the semiotic analysis of Luke's Section C outlined above. This Section C is labelled by the analysis as "Improve on Democracy". Apparently an underlying effort is being made by Luke the writer to 'build in' a sense of time into this "democratic" community, for example:

“Improve on Democracy”	Stress on Time
Jesus urges peace not confrontation (para 1),	instead of taking a knee-jerk reaction
He complains about the lack of a home (para 2)	which is long term
He urges people to look to the future (para 3)	i.e. plan beyond the ‘now’
He urges people to keep moving (para 4)	with a sense of direction
He urges people to reach outwards (para 5)	with a sense of direction
He urges people to make love basic (para 6)	love is long term
He urges people to prioritise reflection (para 7)	i.e. think in terms of the whole of life

When we look at the gospel of Luke in terms of the semiotic analysis above, we also find that his criticisms of a Hellenistic type of society roughly coincide with the tendency of such a society to slide into over-idealism and a tendency to live in the “now”. Thus there are parallels between the criticisms Luke apparently makes of Hellenism and tendencies in the society of Germany in the 1930’s and 1940’s. Consider some of the parallels:

Avoid Over-Stress on Idealism

(And over-emphasis on place and control of place)

Challenges by Jesus in Luke's Gospel (and a relevant quote from the paragraph)	Comparisons with Germany's Nazism (an over-idealised society?)
1 The assumption that a leader is already "saved" <i>"There are those who are first who will be last"</i>	cf. lack of opposition to Hitler
2 Rejection <i>"Jerusalem, the one who kills the prophets"</i>	Rejection of democratic government
3 Hierarchy <i>"noting how they were choosing the chief seats"</i>	cf. the status of Hitler's SS guard.
4 Payment base <i>"when you make a party, invite the poor"</i>	cf. possessions taken by the Nazis
5 Elitism <i>"none of those invited will taste of my supper"</i>	cf. the Nazi party
6 Ideological foundations <i>"This man began to build and was unable to finish"</i>	cf. Hitler's manifesto in <i>Mein Kemp</i>

- | | | |
|----|--|-------------------------------------|
| 7 | Exclusion of difference
<i>"This man receives sinners and eats with them"</i> | cf. Jews, gypsies, homosexuals |
| 8 | Over-absorption into a system
<i>"No household slave can have two masters"</i> | cf. the aims of Hitler
Youth |
| 9 | Material obsession
<i>"hoping for what was falling from the rich man's table"</i> | cf. conquest |
| 10 | Inflexibility
<i>"If he (your brother) repents forgive him."</i> | Whole populations enslaved |
| 11 | Ingratitude
<i>"Where are the other nine (cured lepers)?"</i> | cf. contributions of Jews |
| 12 | Alienation of dignity
<i>"The Kingdom of God lies within you."</i> | cf. In the death camps |
| 13 | Predictability
<i>"Whoever seeks to preserve his life will lose it"</i> | cf. All for the
"Fatherland" |
| 14 | Over-formalised justice
<i>"Because this woman is causing me trouble I will give her justice"</i> | cf. meticulous records of massacres |
| 15 | Self-grandisement
<i>"God I thank you that I am not like the rest of men"</i> | cf. dictatorship |
| 16 | Exclusion of children
<i>"Whoever does not receive the kingdom of God as a child"</i> | cf. exclusion of childhood as such |

- | | | |
|----|--|--|
| 17 | Over-focus on material security
<i>“It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle”</i> | cf. theft |
| 18 | Total self-reliance
<i>“Things impossible .. possible with God”</i> | cf. discarding traditional morality |
| 19 | Focus on this life only
<i>“reward in this age and in the coming eternal life”</i> | cf. power of the fatherland |
| 20 | Closure to the new
<i>“On the third day he will rise again”</i> | cf. ideas outside Nazism ⁸² |

As regards the seventh point above, it might be recalled that whereas Hitler rejected homosexuals as being too “different”, such a lifestyle was acceptable within the Hellenistic society of the Greco-Roman Empire. Luke was providing a critique of Hellenism. However, whichever social grouping is to be rejected by this type of society, would likely depend on the overall social environment of the time. The point being made is rejection of difference. Also, the Hellenists generally did not reject Jews. In the first century CE they comprised about a tenth of the population of the Empire.⁸³ But rejection of “difference” can take a range of forms, for example between male and female. It is interesting for instance to compare the bodies of super-models of the present age with the long-lean looks of the young male.

⁸² Cf. Nailon, *Five Pivotal Texts*, (Melbourne: Project Employment Inc., 2006), 153.

⁸³ Note: cf Wikipedia .

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Historical_Jewish_population_comparisons.

In the time of Hitler, the most obvious target for rejection that the Nazis took on were the Jews. It could be argued that the historical awareness of Judaism, with its focus on tradition and the moral law, contradicted the “compulsed” focus upon place and the “now” that was adopted by the Nazis. Hitler spent much of his time in World War II in the Berghof with its panoramic views of place. Philosophies behind Nazism such as that of Nietzsche encouraged the rejection of time-worn tradition and its morality.⁸⁴ Also, recall that Judaism consists of an historic race of people spread throughout the world, in contrast to Nazi focus on the fatherland. At the time of the 2nd World War, Jews did not have any country or “place” to call their own or any seat at international forums where they could protest about the persecution of Jews in Europe. At a cosmic level, it could be considered there was a clash going on in Germany between the Nazi sense of place with the Jewish sense of time.

In *Truth and Method*, Gadamer constantly tries to assert the validity of a sense of time.



⁸⁴ Gadamer, *Truth and Method*, 316.

C A SIMPLIFIED PRECIS OF *TRUTH AND METHOD*

Part One

TRUTH AS IT EMERGES IN THE EXPERIENCE OF ART

Section 1

The Importance of Traditional Culture and Tradition

Gadamer says the guiding concepts of humanism are based on *Bildung*, that is, culture. This involves a basic movement of the spirit in learning to affirm what is “other”. He says in contrast to this understanding, the philosopher Hegel (1770-1831) claimed that a people’s understanding works outwards from the people themselves and thus they exteriorizes what exists within themselves. (p.13).

Gadamer explains *sensus communis* that (common sense) is part of classical tradition and it is basic to the formation of community (p.19). It is distinct from *phronesis*, that is, practical knowledge. He recalls that Aristotle showed *sensus communis* presupposed a direction of the will and in that way, it was the expression of moral being. Aristotle also said such a sense is acquired through living in community and it involves a virtue of the heart rather than the head (p. 23). Unfortunately, under the influence of the Enlightenment (roughly 1685-1815), the idea of *sensus communis* lost much of its critical significance. For instance if one takes a ‘common sensed’ approach to Scripture, “the works of God can be seen in the whole and all can be seen in each” (of the works of God) (p. 27). However, in the one-sidedness of a

rational method, as stressed especially in the German Enlightenment, the *sensus communis* approach to Scripture was emptied of this full meaning and it was intellectualised.

Gadamer notes that the English moral philosophers did not diverge as widely from the ancient idea of *senses communes* as the German philosophers did. This was because the English philosophers continued to emphasise that moral and aesthetic judgments do not obey reason (p. 29).

Kant (1774-1804) and the Enlightenment

The English position of philosophy was in stark contrast to that of the German philosopher Kant who applied a “stern law of pure practical reason (to judgments)” (p. 31). For Kant, the *sensus communis* was viewed as a preliminary stage (only) of cultivated and enlightened reason. He claimed that practical concepts of good and bad should be based on empirical consequences alone. For him therefore, the basis of his *Critique of Judgement* was “**taste**” (p. 32). Originally this word “taste” described a moral idea that went back to antiquity. However later on, largely due to Kant’s influence, it was limited to its aesthetic meaning only. It was in this way that the understanding of “taste” was shifted out of the centre of philosophy (p. 38). The shift meant a major influence in the unique methodology of the human sciences (as distinct from natural sciences) was then lost.

Kant grounded aesthetics on radical subjectification. This position had an enormous influence in his own time and in the time to follow. It led to a discrediting of any kind of theoretical knowledge, except for that of the natural sciences. Because of this general influence, those who were involved with human sciences including Scripture Scholars felt

pressured into relying on the methodology of the natural sciences in order to retain their own credibility (p. 38).⁸⁵

In Section One of *Truth and Method*, Gadamer goes on to show how the sense of aesthetics was made even more subjective through the Kantian critique. Kant had stressed a subjective role in the understanding of beauty (and truth). This position ultimately undermined the communal interpretation of truth (cf. common sense) which is to be found in art and culture. In contrast to the communal interpretation, Kant claimed there is an “a priori element” within the individual and this element can in itself and on its own, judge “taste”. Thus the “a priori element” within the individual provides “a critique of a critique” (p. 39). He further claimed this “a priori element” is a universal principle. Thus in the exercise of the “a priori element”, “taste” and *sensus communis* are reduced to a subjective principle only. They were no longer seen as containing dimensions of morality that date back to antiquity and which are expressed in art and culture. “Taste” as already noted was reduced to aesthetics.

Kant was not thinking in terms of a morality being derived from an appreciation of beauty and expressed in art (as is traditionally understood). Rather he saw that nature itself provides a more direct experience of beauty. And furthermore, nature provides an unintellectualised beauty.

In a way similar to Rousseau (1712-1778), Kant (1774-1804) saw nature as being more akin to the moral (than what culture was). He also viewed nature as existing for the individual, rather than nature endorsing the ancient idea of man as such, having a role in the universe. With such an approach, beauty and morality thus became subjective. Kant went on to claim that it is “genius” that enables an individual to devise rules

⁸⁵ Note: This is also discussed by Robert Alter, *The Art of Biblical Narrative* (New York: Basic Books c. 1981).

from nature in the creation of art. In this way, “the standpoint of “genius” finally ousts that of taste” (p. 50). Ideas about “taste” and “genius” traded places. Kant considered the “a priori” of subjectivity would (and should) be the final judge of the aesthetic.

His approach to genius, as expressed in art, had some parallels with the views of Hegel (1770-1831). Hegel based aesthetics squarely on the standpoint of art. He claimed it is in art that man encounters himself and spirit meets spirit.

Historically, as it turned out, Kant’s limitation of “genius” to art did not prevail in general thinking. Rather, in the nineteenth century his concept of “genius” rose much higher and it took on the status of a universal concept of value apotheosis (i.e. with a divine status) (p. 55). Kant’s influence persuaded people to “base aesthetic judgment on the subjective ‘a priori’ of our feeling of life.” (p. 32,). Later on, Neo-Kantianism took such a position even further because of its stress on *Eriebris* (immediate experience) as being the “very stuff” of consciousness (p. 55). Thus “immediacy” (and its focus on being in the “now”) would be for the Neo-Kantians, a starting point for interpretation.

The Demotion of Allegory⁸⁶

In *Truth and Method* Gadamer discusses the philosopher Dilthey (1833-1911) at length. He describes Dilthey’s understanding of *Eriebnes* (that is, immediate experience) and says Dilthey saw this as having two parts. He said there is the

⁸⁶ Note: In common parlance, a **parable** is a story or short narrative designed to reveal allegorically some religious principle, moral lesson, psychological reality, or general truth.
https://web.cn.edu/kwheeler/documents/Parable_Allegory.pdf [accessed 30 September 2019].

experience itself and there is the result of the experience. He saw experience as a foundation of art. Thus art is not only seen as an image and idea as in a form of knowing “the truth”. It is also seen as an element in the process of life itself.

Dilthey’s approach to art actually contrasts with the original meaning of *Eriebniskunsi* which means that art comes **from** experience. He shifted the meaning of art in itself, towards something which is **to be** aesthetically experienced. This sort of understanding in Dilthey actually aligned him with Kant and the Enlightenment. Thus on the one hand Dilthey had tried in his approach, to assert the difference between the human sciences and the natural sciences (p. 222 ff) But his efforts in trying to distinguish the two were inadequate.

The influence of Dilthey’s understanding of art and experience led to a devaluation of forms of “art” such as rhetoric. How so? Rhetoric uses allegory which, by definition, points to something else and thereby raises the horizon of understanding. Allegory, it should be noted, is quite different from symbolism (p. 67). Symbols show a metaphysical connection between the visible and the invisible (p. 67). They align one’s experience to what one sees. But such a connection is on the metaphysical level only. Allegory by contrast can be a vehicle for dogmatics (p. 72).

Kant’s new stress on symbolism had divided off symbolism as such, from allegory. And, with Kant’s emphasis on the “a priori element”, it meant that mythology and religious ceremony were to be viewed in terms of symbolism alone. In fact art itself was to be seen as symbolic.

If we attempt to explain Gadamer’s observation here further: symbols connect “the thing” to one’s experience. But they do not entail an in depth exploration of the “otherness” of “the thing”. Also with an over-emphasis on symbolism “the thing” itself can be understood as a symbol. An example of such a

“slide” is as follows. After twelve years at a Catholic school, someone was saying how a work mate of his was teasing him about Catholic belief in the presence of Christ in the Eucharist. He followed up the story with the comment “I didn’t bother to tell him it’s just a symbol”

Gadamer points out in his Section One that there tends to be disproportion in the use of symbolism because meaning as such, is being devalued. (p. 71). He points out that in German classicism there was the idea that with the demotion of allegory, the concept of genius and art itself, was thereby “freed” from the constraints of common sense. But as already noted, in Greek classicism and the traditional Christian interpretation of Scripture, allegory is bound up with the rationalization of myth and also with dogmatics (p. 72).⁸⁷ “Freedom” from common sense and dogmatics means a traditional interpretation of Scripture can be by-passed.

Gadamer considers three philosophers who apparently went further than Kant himself in down-grading a traditional understanding of the interpretation of texts for example, Scripture.

The philosopher **Schiller** (1759-1805), basing his views on Kant, claimed that art and nature were contrasted as being appearance (which is art) and reality (which is nature). He claimed the “ideal kingdom” of art can transcend the frontiers of reality beyond the guardianship of state and society. He also went further than Kant by opposing poetry. Also he claimed that all forms of knowing, outside of the new (Kantian) methodology are to be discredited (p. 51).

In a parallel way, the philosopher **Helmoltz** (1821-1894) describes the work of the human sciences as being

⁸⁷ Note: an allegory is a metaphor re character, place or event. A parable has human characters. However they do compare.

“artistic”(only). He ignored extra-aesthetic elements in the human sciences such as the discernment of purpose, function and the significance of content. By ignoring the content of human sciences which induce us to take up a moral or religious stance in life, art therefore only presents as aesthetic being, or aesthetic consciousness cf.

It distinguishes the aesthetic quality of a work from all the elements of content that induce us to take up a moral or religious stance towards it, and presents it solely by itself in its aesthetic being. (p. 78).

A third philosopher considered by Gadamer in this context is **Hamann** (1730-1788). Hamann went back to the idea of Kant’s transcendental intention. He understood aesthetic consciousness to go beyond being the sole criterion of art. Aesthetic consciousness was given unlimited sovereignty over everything.

The overall point made by Gadamer in looking at these three philosophers is that their influence devalues meaning or significance to such an extent that this becomes of secondary importance. A problem with such thinking is that if aesthetic consciousness dissociates itself from everything that gives it meaning, then it becomes indifferent as to whether or not “the thing” that is being considered, is actually real.

Gadamer points out again that such philosophical position(s) contrast with that of Aristotle who saw sensory particulars in relation to something that is universal (p. 82). In a similar way Gadamer’s mentor Heidegger (1889-1976) taught that it is only when we understand a text in the context of the universal that it exists for us as an artistic creation.

In the context of this discussion, Kant did admittedly refer to the concept of form, e.g. the “motif” of an artist. However, as Gadamer points out, what makes a “motif” is the ability of an

artist to carry the motif through his or her work as a unity of meaning. Implicitly of course, this would involve the passage of time (cf. p. 41) which Kant downplays.

Kant's concept of "genius" did have a transcendental function and his concept of art was grounded in this. However, his successors extended his concept of "genius" to such an extent that it became a universal basis for aesthetics (instead) (p. 55). In the mid C 20th such a universal application appeared as a false romanticism (p. 84).

Gadamer considers philosophers that discounted the Kantian critique. Becker (b. 1939) for instance pointed out that basing aesthetics on experience alone, leads to an absolute series of points which annihilates the unity of a work of art (p. 86). The philosopher Kierkegaard (1813-1855) had described the claim made by Kant's followers to mean the self-annihilation of aesthetic immediacy. This was because the pantheon of art is not done in a timeless present that presents itself to a pure, aesthetic consciousness. Rather, it is an act of a mind and spirit that has collected itself historically (p. 86-7).

In a vein similar to that of Kierkegaard, Gadamer points out that art is a form of knowledge. Experiencing an art work means sharing in that knowledge. The experience of art contains a claim to truth which is certainly different from that of science. Yet just as certainly, it is not inferior to science. In this discussion, he refers to Heidegger (1889-1976) who saw experience as transcending the position of subjectivity. Heidegger claimed that experience is aligned with *dasein* or being as such and he described this *dasein* as time (cf. p. 260-4).

The Relevance of Gadamer's Section One to a Critique of Historical Critical Exegesis

In Section One of *Truth and Method* Gadamer discusses the tendency of German Philosophy in the early twentieth century to have an over-emphasis on subjective experience. This was at the expense of an exploration of “the other”. The approach, as influenced by Kant, downplayed the importance of culture, common sense and tradition. It downplayed the understanding of art as helping people to see their place in the whole universe. The approach also emphasised the use of symbols. It thereby downgraded allegory which is a vehicle of rhetoric and which incorporates dogmatics.

If we consider each of the gospels as a whole, for example that of Luke, he says at the start of his gospel he intends to provide an historically accurate account of the story of Jesus. Throughout his gospel Luke relies on the gospel of Mark. But he constantly redacts Mark to suit his own “rhetoric” and overall interpretation of the life of Jesus. He also adjusts various historical facts. For instance Mark says after the resurrection the women disciples went away in fear. Luke has them telling the disciples about what had happened etc. Luke’s rhetoric or overall interpretation of the life of Jesus extends right through his gospel. It shapes his story of Jesus and in a sense turns the story into a allegory which helps to explain who Jesus was (and is) and what sort of “kingdom” he came to install. The “history” was as Luke understood it.

The “scientific”, diachronic method of historical critical exegesis fails to explore the overall “sweep” of the gospels provided by a rhetorical, structural and allegorical interpretation of Luke’s message. The same point applies to the other gospels as well.

Truth and Method

Section Two

The Subjectivity of Play and Art

Gadamer begins his Section Two of *Truth and Method* with a discussion about play. Play (of course) happens within the framework of time. Gadamer argues that play only fulfils itself if the player loses himself (or herself) within it. This raises the question of the “mode of being” of a play and for that matter a work of art. The play for instance has its own essence which is independent of the person who experiences it. Play as such is capable of changing the involved person. Note that it is not the person but the play (or a work of art) that does the changing.

In such an understanding **the real subject of a game is not the player but the game itself**. Gadamer notes that every game presents a player with a task but this task does not need to point to any purposive content. There is also a self-presentation about a game. Such a self presentation compares with a drama, which is also a form of playing. Such a play or drama draws in the audience. It also puts them into the same place as the player of a game. The play (or drama) takes place within a closed world and it **measures itself by nothing outside of it**.⁸⁸ However at the same time the play or drama can throw light on realities that are outside of it but are which are otherwise constantly hidden. Through participation, people are helped to recognise such things (p. 117). Gadamer points out that this understanding of play is a central motif in the works of Plato. This is because in the dialectics that Plato uses, people recognise what they already know (p. 370, 373).

⁸⁸ Note a parallel here with the definition of semiotic analysis given by the Biblical Commission in “The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church”, 504

Gadamer says advantageous drama exists only when it is played. Because of this, it is therefore absurd to be looking for a unique, “correct” interpretation of the drama. The core thing is that the play fulfils its purpose when it draws in the audience and enables them to recognise realities that are in their lives. Such recognition is irrespective of when or in what era it is that the drama may be performed. In this sense therefore it is timeless (p. 131) as can be seen in the continued relevance of Greek tragedies.

Gadamer goes on to say that a work of art is also a form of play because it cannot be detached from its presentation (cf. p. 503). A festival is similar to this as well because it only exists when it is being celebrated. When someone is present in a festival, they are drawn to participate in it. In this sense they are being taken outside of themselves. Each “presentation” of the festival is an original event. At the same time, because the festival can be repeated the “art” involved here is timeless. Such “art” also includes religious ritual, preaching etc. Such ‘art’ also exists within its own autonomous circle of meaning. This understanding of art is the opposite of the “aesthetic consciousnesses” that has been promoted by the followers of Kant. It is the drama, festival or ritual which is the ‘subject’.

Gadamer goes on to further explain the idea of a play being the “subject”. He points to how Aristotle talked of the closed circle of meaning in a tragedy. In the case of the tragedy the spectator is drawn in and is confronted with “what is”. The spectator is challenged to recognise himself in a metaphysical order of being which is true for all (p. 133). The spectator does not stand aloof as in the case of aesthetic consciousness. Rather they are present and they participate in the tragedy. The tragedy thereby deepens the continuity that lies within the spectator.

In a similar way, a work of literature or music exists in their performance and these enable people to recognise a truth about the way things are (p. 141).

Gadamer talks about how a work of art is not a process of copying. Rather in its presentation it presents a heightened truth. It is not a means to an end but an end in itself. Also, it contrasts with a mirror image because it has its own reality and it increases the being of the original, for example the being of a portrait. In this sense the picture, and indeed the whole of art, is an event of being. This understanding contrasts with the subjectivist attitude of for example Feuerbach (1804-1872) who claimed we “invent” our gods (p. 143).

A picture, e.g. a portrait, increases the reality of what is presented because it points out things that one fails to notice by simply looking. In contrast to this, a sign points away from itself. A symbol is closer to the sign in meaning than a picture is, because the thing that is being symbolised does not exist any more fully because of the symbol.

Gadamer discusses architecture. He says this creates space and attracts attention. It also redirects one’s attention away from the detail as such to the greater ‘whole of life’ context. In this sense it is an event of being and **not** (just) an experiential event of a subjective aesthetic consciousness (p. 155).

Literature is in a borderline position here. The reading of a book remains an event in which the content is similar to that of the self-presentation of a play (cf. p.160). Also there is a living unity within the world of literature. Gadamer says all written texts share in “living unity” and such unity is to be found in the human sciences as a whole. The art of understanding texts is what is described as hermeneutics (p. 164). Hermeneutics is a kind of understanding which has to be acquired (as in learning to read!) and it surpasses the understanding of aesthetic consciousness.

Gadamer's position as regards the understanding of texts differs from that of the philosopher Schleiermacher (1768-1834) who would try to reconstruct a literary work as it was originally written. Gadamer questions whether we can ever really understand the "meaning" of a text in this way (p. 165). Rather, because of the historicity of our being, there needs to be constant mediation between a text written in the past and the present time of the interpreter. He agrees with the view of Hegel (on this point) that a thoughtful mediation between a text of the past with one's own present life is on the same level of truth as is art itself (p. 165).

Relevance of Gadamer's Section Two to a critique of historical critical exegesis

Gadamer's Section Two of *Truth and Method* explains how a work of art such as a portrait 'increases' the reality of what is portrayed. It does this by pointing out realities that one had scarcely noticed beforehand. In this sense the work of art becomes the subject and it continues to be relevant. A work of art such as a tragedy can be dramatised centuries after it was written. It can still draw in people so they gain a greater understanding of the way things are. As a subject it is a whole within itself.

In a similar way a gospel text presents itself as a "whole". In this sense it presents a "paradigm". Besides the presentation of Jesus it can draw attention to realities about societies which continue on, long after the first century CE has passed. However in order for the gospels to be understood and participated in as a whole, they need to be approached and interpreted as a whole. The diachronic approach of historical critical exegesis does not draw in the auditor/ reader in such a way that they can participate in the "whole" drama of a gospel.

Part Two (of *Truth and Method*)

UNDERSTANDING IN THE HUMAN SCIENCES

Section Three

Understanding within a Living Tradition

Section Three begins Part Two, of *Truth and Method*. It starts by pointing out that over time there was a shift from the Enlightenment's approach to history, to that of Romanticism. Luther (1483-1546) for instance believed that the whole of Scripture was connected with a unified sense (p. 183). But in the eighteenth century the idea of a unified canon was abandoned by some Scripture scholars. Instead, Scripture was linked in with the totality of historical reality (p. 184). For Enlightenment scholars that broke with this link, there was no longer any difference between interpreting sacred or secular writings (p. 184).

An example of such a shift can be seen in the philosopher Schleiermacher (1768 – 1834). He claimed that a scholar could not rely on a dogmatic guideline in the interpretation of Scripture. Rather there should be a reliance on the scientific method of philology (study of language) (p. 346, p. 350).

Some writers such as Chladinius (1710-1759) differed from this approach and said that understanding an author, is not the same as understanding their speech. There should be a focus on the intentions of the writer. But Schleiermacher countered such a point by outlining the likelihood of misunderstanding intentions. He described hermeneutics (understanding) as “the

art of avoiding misunderstandings” (p. 191). He stressed that understanding the exact meaning of words would involve going back to the original thought of the text (p. 192). In such case, “hermeneutics” for him should not be understood in terms of the subject matter. Rather it should be an aesthetic reconstruction of language. This approach would put focus on the orientation of language and its context (between the part and the whole), rather than on the “product” of the text. Schleiermacher said dogmatic guidelines could not claim a prior validity (p.196).

In his approach, Schleiermacher put the interpreter on the same level as the author with the idea that the interpreter’s aim “is to understand a writer better than he understood himself” (p. 198). He claimed that this could be accomplished through a study of grammatical rules and literary forms that the writer had followed without realising it (p. 198).

A major problem here, (as Gadamer points out) was that Schleiermacher focussed upon expression rather than content (cf. p. 457).

While Schleiermacher had attempted to devise a method for interpreting the language of ancient writings such as Scripture, Dilthey (1833-1911) attempted to set out a method for the study of history by following Romantic hermeneutics.

Dilthey said a text could be viewed in terms of a universal history and therefore there should be a back and forth study between the whole and its parts. His approach appeared to differ from that of the Enlightenment which considered history moved towards some kind of specific end. However his approach only appeared to be different. Gadamer challenged Dilthey by asking who can one know the totality of history? In fact Dilthey had slipped into a psychological interpretation of history and in this sense his approach to history was similar to that of the Enlightenment (and Descartes) after all. He was

actually looking at only one piece of history at a time. Moreover he was making the discipline of psychology basic to his efforts to understand history. As Gadamer pointed out, psychology can only be a small part of the whole (p. 239).

Gadamer says there is a form of continuity in history that takes place over time. This idea is similar to that of Aristotle's observation that the soul increases within itself, unlike the repetitiveness of nature (p. 260). Dilthey had failed to recognise that historical experience is different from that of nature. He was looking for connections in history rather than the causes of history such as moral powers. In this sense he failed to recognise a universal subject (over time). Yet it is this universal subject that holds together a coherence between the whole and the parts. This idea of a universal subject that stretches over the whole of history conflicts with Dilthey's view. Dilthey saw history only in terms of the historical individuals within it (cf. 259).

Gadamer does not agree with Hegel's ideas about history either. He says Hegel's emphasis on 'spirit,' turns history into a speculative concept. Gadamer talks about a spiritual reality that may look similar to the ideas of Hegel, when he talks about a "structural coherence of life" (p.227). However Gadamer's understanding stresses both the significance of what happens and also the intentionality behind it. Both of these are an expression of life and they form the real ground of the human sciences (p.259)

Gadamer points out that in Dilthey's efforts to develop a "method" for the study of history, he thought his approach could "rise above" the subjective and objective approach of the natural sciences of the philosophers of the Enlightenment. He thought his approach to history would be a human (rather than a natural) science. But his approach neglects the actual nature of history. He "conceived the historical world as a text to be

deciphered” (p 242). The result of this was that ultimately, history was reduced to intellectual history (p 243).

Gadamer again points out that knowledge in the human sciences is not the same as the knowledge gained in the inductive, natural sciences. Again he insists that natural science has a quite different kind of objectivity from human science and it is acquired in a quite different way.

Heidegger and *Dasein* - “being is time”

Gadamer based his own research on the teaching of Heidegger (1889-1976). Heidegger pointed out that the concept of substance (cf. natural sciences) is inadequate in the study of historical being (cf. human sciences). In human sciences there should be a focus on the intentionality of experience and such a focus would eliminate ‘what was not meant’. Heidegger saw the world’s horizons as being made up of anonymous intentionality. For him, this anonymous intentionality formed a communal life-world that was far removed from the idea that only the self could be known.

In relation to this line of thinking and in an appendix to *Truth and Method*, Gadamer points out what he considers to be the main difference between Aristotle’s view of the historical life of mankind and that of the German philosopher Nietzsche (1844-1900). Aristotle saw that the moral and historical life of humankind was related to the order of the cosmos. Nietzsche, on the other hand, saw the cycle of the cosmos in terms of its contrast to human life. He considered that nature does not take any account of man. (p. 521).

Gadamer describes how his mentor Heidegger set out to clarify the meaning of “hermeneutics”. It is an understanding of

something which is observed to exist on the one hand. But the cause or nature of this is in question (p. 255 ff.) At a first look at Heidegger's approach, it appears to be similar to that of Husserl (1859-1938) who went behind the objectivity of science in order to understand the life-world. But Husserl had the idea of a transcendental subjectivism which led him back to the position of Descartes (1596-1650). Heidegger strongly opposed Descartes (p. 282).

Heidegger aimed to return to the beginnings of Western philosophy and the long-forgotten Greek argument about "being" (*Dasein*) (p. 257). He saw that the horizon of "being" was shown to be time (cf. p. 248). That is, what being is, has to be determined from within the horizons of time. Heidegger's thesis therefore was that **"being is time"**. This approach burst asunder the whole subjectivism of modern philosophy. In fact it also burst asunder the whole horizon of metaphysics which had tended to define being in terms of "what is present" (p. 257-9).

Heidegger also revealed the essential forgetfulness of being (p. 258). He took Husserl's idea of the intentionality of universal life and he turned this into a question of "Being". His insight heralded a fresh beginning for the theory of knowledge. It put the human sciences on an equal footing with the natural sciences (p. 259). Now, human sciences needed to be understood in terms of time and this gave them a new dimension. Indeed it showed that the natural sciences are only a sub-species of understanding within the human sciences (p. 248).

Heidegger's focus on "being" (*Dasein*) was parallel to that of Aristotle's focus on the potentiality for being (cf. p. 323 ff). His focus also has an application to the understanding of history. For, whatever the factors may have been, that either made possible or limited potentiality of being, these therefore went before such potentiality and they are part of history.

Gadamer points out “The all-embracing world horizon is constituted by a fundamentally *anonymous* intentionality” (p. 248).

The Relevance of Gadamer’s Section Three to a Critique of Historical Critical Exegesis

In Section Three of *Truth and Method* Gadamer argues that understanding a text involves more than a translation of words or even a study of their background grammar. An understanding of history involves an exploration of the intentionality that has shaped history and the factors that have thwarted its potentialities. Heidegger pointed out that this anonymous intentionality formed a communal life-world.

An understanding of history involves more than comparing one section of history with what one might think to be “the whole” of history. Rather, a study of the unfolding of history has to be understood within the framework of time and this involves a holistic-dimensional approach.

As pointed out in previous pages, the whole of Matthew’s gospel for instance is set out within the framework of time. There is a cause and effect dynamic taking place within the text that has parallels with the enactment that takes place in a play. If this dynamic is to be explored fully, a synchronic approach to interpretation is needed. A historical, critical, exegetical approach is inadequate because it only looks at one part of the text at a time. It prevents the auditor/reader from becoming a full participant in the unfolding of the drama.

Truth and Method

Section Four

Understanding in terms of its fore-structure

Traditionally, hermeneutics has been understood as ‘the art of understanding’. For Heidegger, this “art” involved a “circular” structure for understanding that stretched backwards and forwards between the past and the present. This “art” is based on pre-conceptions. But there is also a process of re-adjustment in the pre-conceptions over time. This distinguishes it from following a “prescription” (or method) for understanding. (p.279)

Heidegger saw the value of pre-judgment that is, “prejudice”. He also recognised that the negative view that Enlightenment philosophers had against prejudice as such, as also tradition (namely religion), was in itself a form of prejudice. They insisted that under all circumstances the ultimate source of authority was reason rather than tradition.

When the period of Romanticism arrived (roughly 1800 to 1850) it may have appeared that this new movement endorsed tradition as such and therefore it contrasted with the Enlightenment. However the status Romanticism gave to tradition was only based on the esteem that it had for something being old. Thus chivalry for instance was given priority over truth. Poetry was esteemed only because it was considered to have an aesthetic effect (p.285-6).

It may also be thought that Romanticism contradicted the main tenets of the Enlightenment. But this was not the case. Before the period of Romanticism, Kant (1724 – 1804) had limited his claim of rationalism to an “a priori element” in the knowledge of nature. However his successors in the Romantic period

(roughly 1800-1850), went even further than Kant in the over-idealisation of rationalism. This was an amplification of Kant's ideas rather than a contradiction of them.

Gadamer makes the point that the Enlightenment had denigrated all authority (p.291). Apparently it also assumed that all obedience is blind obedience. However authority as such can contain dimensions of truth it has a wider view that people under authority do not necessarily have. Thus, a Superior is likely to be better informed. Moreover the tradition behind the authority of a superior also contains a moral force (p.291).

The Enlightenment (and later Romanticism) stressed the need for freedom and its followers denigrated authority and tradition. But Gadamer claims freedom also exists within tradition because tradition can and does adjust. Over time some things are preserved while other things are naturally discarded. He points out that what distinguishes the human sciences from the natural sciences is that the human sciences allow themselves to be addressed by tradition (p. 294). The process of historical research and adjustment, that is, the handing down of tradition, is actually a movement of life. Because human sciences include tradition, they are therefore wider than natural sciences. Natural sciences are only a subordinate part of human sciences rather than the other way around (p. 295).

Gadamer discusses the handing down of tradition in terms of "the classical" approach taken in ancient Greece. This was about passing on the insights of a period of time rather than passing on some sort of supra-historical value. Thus the classical tradition of Greece is preserved into the present, because it says something to the present time as well as it did in the past. These insights of ancient Greece are timeless. Understanding the classics is not a subjective act but rather a participation in the event of a tradition (cf. p. 289 ff).

As regards rhetoric, Gadamer reminds us of the movement taking place between the whole of a text and its parts. Thus in ancient languages, one needs to ‘construe’ a sentence before trying to understand a single word of the sentence. Rather than attempting to enter into an author’s mind at a metaphysical level, the interpreter needs to “transpose ourselves into the perspective within which the writer has formed his views.” (p. 303).

Gadamer’s approach to understanding language contrasts with that of Schleiermacher and the Romantics. They denied that the tradition in which an author found himself was a solid base for understanding what was meant. Instead, Schleiermacher attempted to place himself entirely into the writer’s mind in a process described as “historical consciousness”. Gadamer on the other hand, claimed that it is in the tradition that is common to both the writer and the interpreter later on, that the ancient writer is to be understood. He points out that interpretation of an ancient text is inevitably affected by the later, historical situation of the interpreter. Also, because later, historical situations are themselves constantly changing, the discovery of the true meaning of the text can never be finalised (p. 309). In any case, the process of discovery of truth within a text takes place within the context of tradition.

Gadamer claims that the naïveté of so-called “historicism” (cf. “historical consciousness”) means that its followers forget their own historicity. They fail to recognise historical effects on their own presuppositions. They focus instead, on a methodical critique of history and this results in a “deformation” of knowledge (p. 312).

The horizon of the past is always in motion. So also is our own historical horizon. In order to understand the past we need to move into an horizon that is beyond our own. But we cannot afford to let go of where we ourselves are standing,

within history. In this sense therefore there is “a fusion of horizons” consisting of the merging of our own present historical situation with the situation of the past. The tension that is caused by such a “fusion” between an historical text and one’s present situation is not something to be covered up. It needs to be brought out into the open (cf. p. 313).

The Problem of Application

In the early tradition of hermeneutics (that is, understanding) the problem of “application” (that is, the relevance of past insights to present situations) had a pronounced place. Understanding included interpretations in the areas of theology and law. In fact these two things together, made up the full concept of hermeneutics (p.319). True, there was always a tension about application in both theology and law. For instance how should a law be concretised, and/or what are the saving effects and relevance of a gospel text to the present time? Working out the relevance of past texts to present situations becomes in itself, an event. Again one is reminded here of the enactment of a play.

In contrast to the early tradition of hermeneutics the emergence of “historical consciousness” in the C 18th and C 19th has involved giving priority to philological (language) hermeneutics. Thus it has been philology rather than application that has been stressed and such a stress has resulted in an emphasis on ‘method’. Historical studies with the new emphasis on philology cut ties with the other disciplines of hermeneutics. Historical studies were turned into models of methodology for research. This in turn has led to too much subjectivity and objectivity in the approaches that were being taken.

The Hermeneutic Relevance of Aristotle

In contrast to a focus on “historical consciousness”, a focus on application (as distinct from ‘methods’ of studying history) means that a tradition has to be constantly re-interpreted in order to understand its relevance to the changing times of the present. Aristotle provides an example of such on-going re-interpretation. He founded ethics as a discipline of application and he based this upon action and not metaphysics. He taught that man becomes what he is through what he does and how he behaves (p. 323). He said that in a moral situation, it is impossible to achieve the extreme exactitude of mathematics as in Plato’s “doctrine of ideas” (p. 323). Rather, for Aristotle as with Socrates, knowledge was considered to be essential because this would help the process of reinterpretation and application that is needed in order to govern one’s action.

Aristotle’s focus on application contradicted the objectivity of method which was stressed by the Enlightenment and its successors. In fact such objectivity alienates the interpreter from what is interpreted. Method turns consciousness into a technique or “*techne*” similar to that of the craftsman. By contrast, Aristotle’s understanding of “*phronesis*”, meaning practical wisdom, is different from “*techne*”. Also, in view of practical reason Aristotle saw that law as such is distinct from what is naturally right. He said there is always a tension between law and concrete action because the “nature of the thing” is constantly asserting itself (p. 329, 424).

In making a distinction between technical and moral knowledge, Aristotle pointed out that moral knowledge is an end in itself. Technical knowledge on the other hand, has a particular end (cf. the “*techne*” of the craftsman). With Aristotle’s approach, one needs to be able to apply a text of for example, Scripture, to one’s own situation if it is to be really

understood. This process of application should not be disregarded or downgraded.

At the present time, to give credit to those who expound on the Historical Critical Exegesis method of interpreting Scripture, it appears that they do generally mention the need for an application of a Scriptural text to one's own present situation. However this application does not necessarily hold a key place in the method of interpretation they present. For instance in one "Guide to Exegesis" a step of "Application" is included. However this is the last of twelve steps in an exegesis and it looks somewhat like a post script ⁸⁹ At the same time, selecting out passages that appear relevant to the present time is not necessarily an answer to an adequate approach to interpretation either. R Alter for instance in his book *The Art of Biblical Narrative* , points out that selections of small sections of text that appear relevant for a sermon, can result in the neglect of other sections of text and also the context of the whole..⁹⁰

The Significance of Legal Hermeneutics

Gadamer puts a focus on legal hermeneutics because this can re-assert the true function of hermeneutics. In legal hermeneutics the process of application is stressed. And, as mentioned above, the traditional/classical meaning of hermeneutics requires the application of a text in order to understand it.

Legal hermeneutics endorses the need for application. The jurist studies a law which was set up in a prior situation. But

⁸⁹ B.Rod Doyle, "Guide to Exegesis of a Text from a Pauline Letter" ed. Rosemary Canavan (Melbourne: Catholic Theological College, c. 2016).

⁹⁰ R.Alter, *The Art of Biblical Narrative*, 35, 154.

now they have to see how that law of the past applies to a current, changed situation. That is, they have to apply the law. They have to recognise the ‘dogmatic’ content of the law. Legal hermeneutics is distinct from ‘historical consciousness’ (p.319) (as in putting oneself in the position of the original reader and ignoring one’s own historicity).

It is distinct from modern hermeneutics as such because this has tended to disregard dogma for a focus instead on philology (study of the meaning of words).

Legal hermeneutics requires the jurist to mediate between the past text and the present situation. He or she cannot objectify the text or ignore their own situation. Rather they have to see “the continuity of the past with the present” (p. 336). Gadamer says a historian can follow this same discipline of linking the past with the present by putting a focus on the significance of what happened in the past. In doing this, in the same way as a preacher or jurist, they cannot ‘make free with the text’.

Gadamer says that legal hermeneutics and other types of hermeneutics carried out in the same way, conflict with the approach of modern science, that is, “the natural sciences”. What makes modern scholarship “scientific”, is precisely the fact that it objectifies tradition. It methodically eliminates the influence of the present interpreter and his own time (p. 342). As in Schleiermacher’s approach, the interpreter skips the task of mediating between the past and the present (p. 342). This is different from the understanding of, for instance, a military order which needs to be interpreted according to the current situation. It involves linking the past (when the order was issued) with the present.

As regards philology as such, Gadamer does see a role for this. But philology only ‘works’ if it is tied in with an historical search for significance. Again Gadamer refers back to legal

proceedings. In a courtroom, what is significant to a trial is brought out into the open. So also, the same procedure should be followed with philology and history. What is significant in language and in events should be highlighted. Gadamer calls this “effected consciousness” and contrasts it with “historical consciousness” (p. 312).

Gadamer agrees with Hegel in his claim that the basis for hermeneutics should be the “absolute mediation of history and truth” (p.350). But he also points out that Hegel’s fusion of the whole of tradition with the present has parallels with the position of the idealism of the Enlightenment. Hegel for instance made claims about the complete limitlessness of our historical horizon. As with Schleiermacher therefore, individuality for Hegel was pantheistically embraced within the absolute. Gadamer disagrees with this.

Hegel had disagreed with Kant’s position that we cannot know ‘the thing in itself’ behind appearances because in such case, reason has set a boundary. It must have been to the other side of such a “boundary” in order to set the boundary. Hegel claimed instead, that “the other”, can be known. But this can only happen when it is recognised (and reconciled) with the self. However, as Gadamer points out, a chief problem about such a position is that, as with the sophists of Plato’s time, it tells us nothing! (p. 353-4).

In ‘classical’ times, when Plato was dealing with the sophists he realised that argument alone would not refute them. He therefore relied on myth to do this. Gadamer says that in coming to grips with Hegel (1770-1831) a similar approach is needed. But Hegel rejected myth as such and relied only on reason. In doing this he left no room for the experience of the other – such as “the Thou” (p. 355).

Gadamer turns his attention to experience and the light that this throws on Hegel’s over-emphasis on the mind.

The Importance of Experience in Understanding

Gadamer admits that experience plays an important role in the natural sciences and in the logic of induction. However he also points out that an over-emphasis on experience can actually “truncate” its original meaning. Why so? Natural sciences take note of experience. But its methods take no account of the inner historicity of experience (p.355).

The aim of science is to objectify experience in such a way that scientific experiment can be conducted methodically. This means that the “experience” of an experiment can be repeated by anyone. Gadamer points out that in the human sciences, a similar approach is taken when the historico-critical method is used (in the interpretation of Scripture) (p.355). (Note: This mention of the historico-critical method in the interpretation of Scripture is one of the few occasions when Gadamer specifically names and criticises this method of interpretation.) Gadamer points out that such a practice has the same problems that arise when natural science methods are applied in general to a human science. They omit the inner historicity of experience.

He goes on to say that on the one hand natural science methods allow the whole process of interpretation to be checked. In fact the validity of the experience in such case depends on its being repeatable. But in reality, not all of the experience can be checked.

Mention is made of the philosopher Bacon (1561 – 1626) who warned against applying induction about experience when there are no contradictory (e.g. inner) experiences being recorded. Rather he said a step by step approach should be taken (p. 356).

Gadamer returns to his reliance on the position of Aristotle. “Experience is not science itself but it is a necessary condition of it” (p. 359). He says Aristotle provides a much wider understanding of experience than what modern science (and the Enlightenment) would allow. Aristotle endorses the idea that experience is a process and it is in fact, dialectical.

Gadamer considers that the approach of Hegel is “dialectical”. However “The dialectic of experience has its proper fulfilment, not in definitive knowledge but in the openness to experience that is made possible by experience itself” (p. 364). In this context Gadamer discusses the Greek tragedy of Aeschylus in which, through suffering, one comes to realise the great barrier that “separates man from the divine.” Such an experience is not a matter of reaching a higher form of knowledge, but rather of reaching a barrier between oneself and the divine. Gadamer says that “genuine experience is experience of one’s own historicity.” (p. 365). In his own terminology, this is described as “historically effected consciousness”. He points out the importance of tradition as it is a genuine partner in dialogue. In fact it is by thinking within one’s own historicity (and tradition) that knowledge is possible.

As mentioned above this position contrasts with “historical consciousness”. In such case a person detaches themselves from their own historical reality and tradition (or they try to do this).

Plato’s dialectic and the Importance of Question

Gadamer says the readiness or openness of “historically effected consciousness” as he calls it, enables someone to ask the right questions. They know that they do not know and they therefore have a sense of direction in the questions they ask. This approach is in accord with Socrates who said that

knowledge is dialectical. The Socratic-Platonic dialectic was based on the art of questioning. Such an art was geared towards discovering the real strength in what was answered and was also based on forming concepts by working out the common meaning. Just as this method was followed with the students of Socrates, so also one can enter into a similar dialogue with a text. This, according to Gadamer, is the correct approach of hermeneutics (p. 376).

Gadamer considers the position of the philosopher R. G. Collingwood (1889-1943) cf. “We can understand a text only when we have understood the question to which it is an answer.” (p. 378). Gadamer says there is need to admit that the subjective thoughts of an individual (for example as proposed by Hegel) cannot understand the “infinite web of motivations” that have existed within history. Moreover “the sense of a text can reach far beyond what its author originally intended.” (p. 380). Thus a text is, in a sense, an event and what is significant about either history or the text, comes to light later on. Moreover when one stands in the same “living’ tradition, one is in a better position, to ask questions about significance as such.

With such an approach of questioning we may not only recover concepts of the historical past, but also develop an understanding that will include the concepts of our own time. Gadamer calls this a ‘fusion of horizons.’ (p. 382)

The Relevance of Gadamer’s Section Four to a Critique of Historico-Critical Exegesis

Historico-critical exegesis aligns itself with the “methods” of the natural sciences (p. 355). But these methods do not encompass the inner historicity of experience. Diachronic methods do not require an interpreter to “fuse” the horizon of

their present with that of the horizon of the past. They do not require the interpreter to become involved in the “living tradition” of the original writer or ask the questions to which the whole text is an answer.

Part Three

(of *Truth and Method*)

HERMENEUTICS BEING GUIDED BY LANGUAGE

Section Five

Language and Hermeneutics (i.e. understanding)

Gadamer begins Part Three and Section five of *Truth and Method* by saying we can become so involved in a conversation that this becomes an event within itself. Such an “event” is not a matter of “getting inside” another person. But rather there is a process of interpretation and mediation going on between the participants in the conversation. Ultimately “understanding and interpretation are the same thing” within the conversation (p. 406). Gadamer points out “the essence of tradition is to exist in the medium of language.” (p. 407). Thus writing and a text become “a unique co-existence of past and present” (p. 408).

“Historical consciousness” (which he opposes) excludes what makes understanding possible because in such case, one ignores one’s own historical situation. A person interpreting a text should be “bringing himself and his own concepts into the interpretation.” Moreover it needs to be noted again that

concepts themselves “are constantly in the process of being formed” (and reformed) (p. 421). Later on, in an appendix to *Truth and Method* Gadamer follows up this line of thinking by pointing out that because of this process, tradition always has something more to yield (p. 523).

Language and the Logos

In a discussion of the development of the concept of language in Western thought, Gadamer points out that in earliest times there was a unity between the word and a thing in itself. People considered that the name was part of the thing. However this position shifted with the Greek Enlightenment. Plato said that instead of this, linguistic usage should be seen as “only the source for the meanings of words.” (P. 424). He said there was therefore minimal connection between the word and the thing. Plato gave the example of numbers. The words for these have their meaning based on convention alone and the name of a number is not directly connected to the number itself. On the other hand Plato did consider that it was reasonable to think there was a similarity principle between a word and a thing. But he thought this needs to be applied in a very liberal way (p. 427). Basically therefore, Plato did not see the “word” as being directly related to an original thing, nor did he see it as being a copy of the thing.

On these same lines, Socrates the teacher of Plato, had criticised the sophists and the close link they made between the word and the thing. Rather, Socrates stressed the importance of the interplay of words in discourse and the intention of a unitary meaning in the words that were being used. He also pointed out the ability of words to present an untruth rather than just the truth alone. As with words used for the numbers in a sequence, the stress made by Socrates and later on by Plato in his *Cratylus*, was on the intelligibility of words. They

claimed that it is the “logos”, rather than the word as such, which is the ‘bearer’ of truth.

According to Gadamer the position taken by Plato in his *Cratylus* with regard to words was to “influence all further thinking about language” (p. 430). He pointed out that Plato stressed the word was “a sign” rather than “a copy” of a thing (p. 431). However from the *Cratylus* on, the “word” was reduced to a wholly secondary function in relation to the thing. It was (and is) understood to be a mere “instrument of communication.”

Gadamer goes on to point out how this approach was seized upon by the C 18th to C 20th Enlightenment. Those in the Enlightenment considered that variations that occurred between languages as they developed, were “mere flaws in their utility.” In this way their approach “objectified” language.

Gadamer admits that science, as in the disciplines of natural sciences, requires technical terms that have a set meaning within language. However there is a danger here that words that originally had a range of meanings are thereby limited to the one meaning only. This sort of practice of confining the meaning of words, contradicts the living meaning of words when these are spoken in a living language.

Gadamer holds the view that words are not just signs but are also like a copy or image of a thing as well. In this way he opposes the Greek emphasis on “ideality” and he opposes the Greek opposition to the idea, that language could in itself have a life of its own. He said for the Greeks, “The notion that language should have a being of its own, could only be regarded as a confusion.” (p. 435).

Language and “the Word”

At this point in *Truth and Method* Gadamer goes on to consider the Christian idea of “the Word”. He sees this Christian idea as being in contrast to the understanding of “word” in Plato and Greek thinking in general. He says in particular, an understanding of “the Word” that contrasts with that of the Greek *logos*, is the Christian idea of incarnation. This is expressed theologically in the doctrine of the Trinity. For the Christians, the idea that “the Word” became flesh” frees the ‘logos’ from its spirituality. Also in such case, “the word” as such becomes an event. **“The Word” is that which emerges and externalises itself in utterance.** This understanding of “the Word” also contrasts with a depreciation of sensible experience that is entirely Platonic (p. 438).

The inner “Word” has its being in its revealing. Such a connection between thought and speech undergirds the Christian, theological interpretation of the Trinity. In such case “the Word” can no longer simply mean the Greek *logos* (p. 439 and cf. Acts 15:30 – 20:31).

Note that these comments in *Truth and Method* have relevance to a comparison between Gadamer’s understanding of “the Word” and Section D of a semiotic analysis of Luke’s *Acts* as provided in the pages above. In the analysis Luke’s Section D is devoted to describing “the Word” at length. It also presents “the Word” as a subject ⁹¹.

Gadamer quotes St Thomas Aquinas in pointing out that there is a difference between the inner process of the Trinity and the processes of the mind. In the human mind “the word” is like a reflecting mirror. But it can only reflect the one thing because the human mind is essentially incomplete. Human thought

⁹¹ Nailon, *Five Pivotal Texts*, 240-247.

may be directed towards a thing but it cannot contain the whole of it (p. 443). This is not the case with the Trinity.

The Christian idea of “the Word” expressed as an event, links in with the Christian understanding of proclamation of the gospel. Proclamation of the gospel is an event which is ever new because it is, in a sense, alive.

Language and concept formation

Gadamer says:

When the Greek idea of logic is penetrated by Christian theology, something new is born; (that is) the medium of language, in which the mediation of the incarnation event achieves its full truth. **Christology prepares the way for a new philosophy of man, which mediates in a new way between the mind of man in its finitude and the divine infinity.** (p. 445-6).

He goes on:

Individual words acquire their meaning and relative unambiguity only in the unity of discourse, so the true knowledge of being can be achieved only in the whole of the relational structure of the ideas (p. 447).

In the understanding of Aristotle, in the cases of music, mathematics and physics, where there is a field of rational objectivities already marked out, terms that are being used can no longer be really called words. This is because they do not have the ‘word freedom’ that Aristotle recognised. In this

sense Aristotle's idea fits in more with the Christian Trinitarian idea of "the Word" unfolding.⁹²

Word and speech are constantly being taken over by the thinking mind and often accidental attributes affect the meaning of a word. For instance there are 200 different words for camel (p. 452). There is an essential inexactness in human language which can be overcome only if the mind rises to the infinite, that is, to the one single Word of God that is reflected in everything.

Language as the horizon of understanding how things are

Gadamer recognises the importance of Humboldt (1769-1859) (despite his base in the Enlightenment). Humboldt considered a language-view to be a worldview. Gadamer enlarges on this, recalling how in Genesis, God gave Adam the authority to name creatures. There is a freedom being expressed here because in this sense speech brings the world into language (p. 461). The verbal world embraces every thing and in this way our insight into the reality of the thing can be enlarged and opened. This approach contrasts with the idea that language is artificial because in such case language can **only** be a tool of communication (p. 463). In an appendix to Section Five of *Truth and Method* Gadamer develops these ideas further and he goes on to criticise the subjectivist flavour of the modern concept of "expression." Here, he says, the stress is on making an impression rather than being the actual expression of an experience (as e.g. in music) (p. 524).

⁹² Note: The Christian understanding of the "Word" would be influenced by the Jewish understanding of the Word cf. "And God said "Let there be light" etc. Gen 1:3.

In Gadamer's understanding, the verbal world can be open to every possible insight and indeed each world view can be extended into every other (p. 463). There is an historical conditioning taking place here. He contrasts the 'artificial' wording and methods of the natural sciences with the open-endedness of the verbal world as reflected in the human sciences. The 'artificial' wording used in natural science is only a part of, and indeed a minor part of the whole, verbal world.

Language as medium and its speculative structure

Gadamer points out that in Hegel (and in German idealism) there is a repetition of ancient Greek opinion about thought and being. The Greeks believed that being as such was fulfilled in thought (alone). On the other hand, Plato was fascinated by the idea that a single word could come from a whole fabric of related words. This fascination is actually connected to the Augustinian understanding of the Trinity and the infinity of "the Word".

As a follow through on this point, Gadamer reminds us that for human beings language is qualified by the finitude of human experience. In this sense it is a medium. But at the same time, "Every language is constantly being formed and developed the more it expresses its experience of the world." (p. 473).

In the context of the finitude (limitation) of human experience, acts of understanding and interpretation are an "event". Also, there is the activity of the thing in itself that needs to be taken into consideration. In the example of a text, the meaning of the text asserts itself and therefore this becomes an event. Despite similarities here with Hegel's view, there is also a contrast here. Hegel fails to recognise that finitude is the basis of

experience. Also, he stresses subjectivity and he stays within the realms of thought.

Gadamer's view by contrast, allows for the influence of historical experience and he says that tradition has a key role in the development of understanding. Moreover he points out that every appropriation of tradition is historically different. This is because each time part of a tradition is made one's own, it is an experience of that part of the tradition (p. 489).

The Universal Aspect of Hermeneutics (i.e. understanding)

Gadamer's fifth and final section in *Truth and Method* deals with the "being in itself" of language. In contrast to the Enlightenment, he insists language is more than a tool to be manipulated and objectified.

Despite comparisons between the Greeks and the Enlightenment, the Greeks did not see language in the same way. Thus on the one hand, in comparison with the Enlightenment the Greeks prioritised thought. But they also saw language as "something that the thing itself does and which thought "suffers". For the Greeks, language was a speculative movement that, in a sense, takes hold of the speaker (p. 490). Plato for instance saw beauty in terms of the self-presentation of beauty. Its proportion and symmetry enabled the viewer to understand the beauty that exists in the sphere of the intellect and beyond that again, in the idea of the Good. Such a view of Plato contrasts with the emphasis that occurred in the C18th and C19th when the beauty of art was only seen as a reflection of the (human) mind. Gadamer recalls that such a trend, that moved aesthetics towards such subjectivism, began with Kant. Gadamer goes on to explain

that like “the beautiful”, language presents itself in a way that is similar to the way that art presents itself and this is also similar to his description of play. Art and play as such, become the subject and they draw people into them. The portrait also demonstrates this. It enhances the reality of the one portrayed because it enables the viewer to see what would otherwise go unnoticed. As with art, so it also is with poetry. Indeed all language enhances the reality of what is spoken about. But one needs to realise that it is the language in itself, as in the case of art, that is presenting itself.

Through dialogue and through question and inquiry, one is able to discover truth in the language of a text . This is different from thinking that by using a method that ‘objectifies’ language, one is thereby able to discover the truth.

Relevance of Section Five to a Critique of the Historico-critical method of Exegesis

Section Five explains how language, like art and play, presents itself as a subject. Language draws people in and enables them to see reality more fully. Some ‘words’ may have a set meaning but in such case they are not ‘real’ words. In general the meaning of words are in a constant state of flux. Efforts to translate words inevitably fall short. Language can only be understood by entering into its living tradition and trying to understand what questions an ancient text may be answering. The major challenge in interpretation is to search out the questions to which the text is an answer. This requires a synchronic rather than a diachronic approach.

CHAPTER THREE

TOWARDS A SOLUTION WITH JOHN'S GOSPEL

A INTRODUCTION

Inadequacy of 'the solution' thus far

If we go back to the overall line of thinking in this present project of *Is Christian Morality Unique? Parts One and Two*, a solution to the question of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* is still not complete.

Part One of the project explores the morality of Christianity as set out in the New Testament. It concludes there is an emphasis on the commandments of "Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not steal", (cf. "money, power and sex"). Part One also demonstrates how within the texts of the Pauline letters there is a "raising of the bar" for these three commandments. This is clarified at the Jerusalem Council (cf. *Acts* 15). It involves an idealisation as it were, of the commandments. Paul's presentation of the commandments is picked up reinforced in the synoptic gospels. Thus the commandment about "killing" discourages cruelty as such. The commandment about adultery discourages uncommitted sex and the betrayal of family relationships. The commandment about stealing discourages the range of unfair business practices. In fact the gospels go further than this. The commandment about "do not kill" becomes a challenge to empower all others. The commandment about "do not commit adultery" becomes a challenge to reinforce the basic social

supports of all others. The commandment about ‘do not steal’ becomes a challenge to provide for the material well-being of all others.

There is a “raising of the bar” of commandment observance rather than reinforcing that observance with myriad rules. This interpretation of the commandments is at the base of modern industrialisation.

At the end of Part One of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* there was a brief examination of other world religions and their own emphasis on morality relating to “money, power and sex.” This led to the suggestion that perhaps Christian morality may not be so unique after all.

In response to this, Part Two of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* has taken up another angle on the uniqueness of Christianity and its morality. It has shown that at the base of Christianity there is a dialectical tension between two differing world views with their own values and social structures. Christian morality is worked out against a background of dialectical tension between the two and this is what defines its morality as unique.

The use of semiotic analysis with a sociological approach that has been used in this project may have followed the encouragement towards this given by the Catholic Pontifical Biblical Commission. However the analysis has been classed by at least one Professor of New Testament Studies as not being New Testament Studies at all. Rather he said it is Sociology of Religion. This view, apparently shared by others, has detracted from the credibility of showing that Christianity is based on a hybrid structure. Putting this another way. For every twenty plus New Testament academics in Melbourne Australia there might be one academic if that, who deals with Sociology of Religion. Thus when such an approach to the gospels is categorised as Sociology of Religion, it is then sidelined and “out of sight, out of mind”.

In response to the “side-lining”, the lengthy précis of Gadamer’s *Truth and Method* above raises a question instead about the “credibility” of the Historical Critical Exegesis method that dominates in New Testament Study circles. The précis also demonstrates that the so-called “Sociology of Religion” analysis provided above fits with the wider disciplines of human sciences more than historical critical exegesis.

However a question still arises. If Christianity is based on two differing and often conflicting world views then what can hold these two positions together? How can it stay united in the one, socially organic community?

How can a Divided Christianity Stay United?

An answer to this question can be explored by going back to Mark’s Chapter Ten. Jesus challenges a man searching for a better life and says to him. “Go sell what and give to the poor. You will have treasure in heaven. And coming follow me.” (Mark 10:21). Here Mark introduces a realisation that essentially, Christianity is about the following of Jesus Christ. This following applies whether one is rooted in the one world view cf. law and time or the other world view cf. Order and place. Jesus Christ stands midway between the two world views. He draws people into an identification with him.

It is shown in the analyses above, that this identity of Jesus is developed through the gospels in passages that relate to “the child”. One could suggest that this is the “adult child”. Only someone with the flexibility of a child can move between the world views of Judaism and Hellenism, cf. “Unless you become as little children you shall not enter the kingdom of God.” (Mark 9:30). In terms of the analyses of the synoptic

gospels as shown above, such “child” passages include Mark’s Section C and Section A in Matthew and Section A in Luke.

It is in the fourth gospel, the gospel of John, that a demonstration of the “midway” position of Jesus reaches a culmination. John shows that if Christianity is to “work” into the future the members of the two differing types of society need to identify with the child-like presence of Jesus. Jesus is not just an historical figure of the past. He continues to live on.

Jesus Christ

The Living Authority and the Living Word

A semiotic analysis of the gospel of John shows how Jesus portrays both the Living Authority of God (cf. Judaism) and the Living Word of God (cf. Hellenism). A key, underlying argument in John is to exhort the followers of Jesus to identify with him. It is only in this way that the hybrid community of Christianity can survive.

A semiotic analysis of the gospel actually ties in with central themes in Gadamer’s *Truth and Method* as shown above. How so? Gadamer demonstrates that there is a living tradition within the passage of time that provides a base for humankind’s understanding of morality. There is an interconnection between the tradition and the anonymous good will of people acting upon history. Implicitly this tradition links in with the will of God being enacted in a corporate way within history and over time. An analysis of a Section B of John’s gospel appears to elaborate on this same idea. It presents Jesus as the living expression of God’s Authority.

Gadamer also demonstrates how all language is interconnected and is in a process of change. It acts as a “subject” helping people to notice the reality of what is around them. In this sense it is “alive”. To extrapolate on this point. Insofar as language expresses the “truth” about reality, then this ties in with an apparent Section C in the gospel of John. This gospel Section appears to present Jesus as an expression of God’s Living Word.

Some Comments on

the “Grammar” of a Semiotic Analysis of John

Before taking a closer look at John’s gospel and in view of the lack of credibility in a semiotic, analytical approach to it, some further comments need to be made (cf. “I can’t make head or tail of this!”). The Pontifical Commission says that according to this approach. “Each text follows a “grammar,” that is to say, a certain number of rules or structures.”⁹³ Parallels between the “grammar” found in John’s gospel and the synoptic gospels include the following:

Apart from “child” sections,

- Paragraphs are organised according to a key word which is a paragraph “hook”.
- When the paragraphs are paired into a pattern of either a concentric circle or parallel pairs, each pair of “hooks” are matched.

⁹³ Pontifical Commission, “The Interpretation ...”, 504.

- There is only the one “hook” per paragraph. (Mark makes an exception here when he has an (a) and (b) in one pair to show a link between individual and corporate guilt).
- The gospels are divided up into four or six sections.
- John’s B and C Sections are organised so the sequence of paragraph “hooks”, as with Luke’s Section B, are followed by a repeat of the same sequence (that is, . 1,2,3,4,5 followed by 1,2,3,4,5).
- As with Luke and Mark’s gospel, when the texts of the paragraph pairs are compared, further parallels can be found and these reinforce the key point common to the pair.
- When all the key points of a Section are added together, they provide an overall heading for the Section.
- At the logico-semantic level of the texts, each Section develops into the next one.
- There is a “tie-in” of themes within all four gospels and Acts. For instance John’s Section C about the “Living Word” continues on from a lengthy description of “the Word” that is provided by Luke in his Section D in *Acts*. Here Luke presents “the word” as subject.

- Another instance of a “tie-in” relates to the “hooks” for paragraphs in Mark’s Section D. These are based on the range of ways in which people respond to Jesus. This theme of “response to Jesus” establishes the theme developed later on by John of the underlying need for the Christian to follow Jesus.
- In the on-going theme about the need to follow Jesus he is presented as “the child”.
- The “child” sections have a more informal arrangement of paragraphs.

A note about John’s Sections B and C. At the start of his Sections B and C, John emphasises that a following of Jesus means a new beginning. In the history of the Jews, a new beginning was marked out with the crossing of the Red Sea. Recall that God held back the waters of the sea to allow the Israelites to escape from the Egyptian army (Exod 14:21-22). In the opening paragraph pairs of John’s Sections B and C there is a crossing of water.



B THE GOSPEL OF JOHN

Pass on the Power of One

Section A

INTRO TO THE AUTHORISED, LIVING WORD

John 1:1-1:18

Section B

HEED CHARACTERISTICS OF LIVE AUTHORITY

John 1:19 - 5:47

Paragraph hooks re Locations

Role of Living Authority	Place <i>1st Para.</i>	Place <i>2nd Para</i>	Power & Event
1.Represents God	Bethany beyond Jordan <i>1:19-34</i>	Judea at Jordan <i>3:22-36</i>	Baptising
2. . Invites	Into Galilee <i>1:35-51</i>	Into Galilee <i>4:1-42</i>	Come / Give me
3. .Uses power	Cana/Galilee <i>2:1-10</i>	Cana/Galilee <i>4:43-50</i>	1st & 2nd signs,
4. Relies on Household	Capernaum/Galilee <i>2:11-12</i>	Capernaum/Galilee <i>4:51-54</i>	c/f power exercised
5. Works for Father	Jerusalem/Temple <i>2:13-25</i>	Jerusalem/Temple <i>5:1-24</i>	re 'house' /Sabbath

6. . Gives witness	Night <i>3:1-21</i>	An hour <i>5:25-47</i>	witness re Moses
--------------------	------------------------	---------------------------	------------------

In order to verify whether or not this Section C credibly comes under the heading of “Heed Characteristics of Live Authority,” with matching paragraphs there is the following demonstration of parallels between the fourth, fifth and sixth paragraph pairs.

	1 st paragraph	2 nd paragraph	Power & Event
4. . Relies on Household	Capernaum/ Galilee <i>2:11-12</i>	Capernaum/ Galilee <i>4:51-54</i>	power exercised
	‘Beginning of signs’ Disciples believed Jesus’ household	‘Second sign’ A father believed Man’s household	
5 . Works for Father	Jerusalem/Temple <i>2:13-25</i>	Jerusalem/Temple <i>5:1-24</i>	“House” & Sabbath
	Expels temple sellers Authority questioned will raise within three days Disciples, many believed	Cures lame man The cure criticised Father raises dead Person who believes	

6. . Gives witness	Night (Nicodemus) <i>3:1-21</i>	An hour <i>5:25-47</i>	witness re Moses
	Born of water & spirit	They come forth into resurrection of life	
	We give witness	Father gives witness	
	Moses lifted up	Moses accuses	

(The last point about ‘night’ and ‘hour’ appears to carry some exception to the rule re place hooks).

The parallel points between the paragraphs appear to endorse the idea that they give an outline of the characteristics of Living Authority. At the same time beneath the text John appears to be dealing with a more local issue. It appears that at the turn of the first century, the church was still struggling to maintain unity between Greek and Jewish converts. In his gospel John wants to put the focus on a need to follow Jesus. His Section B is dealing with Jesus as exercising the authority of God. At the same time beneath the Section, John also appears to address the group that has problems with authority as such, that is the Gentile converts. These people may have been citizens of the Roman Empire with its imposition of power over the known world. But in areas of moral authority relating to cruelty, promiscuity and injustice, the Empire’s corporate morality fell well short. It had institutionalised cruelty e.g. in the amphitheatres, its system of slavery over-rode family relationships, it imposed heavy taxes on the peoples it conquered.

Suggestions that the Gentile followers and 'outsiders' are being addressed on the subject of a Living Authority are as follows:

1. Disciples are coming **into Judea** (from outside). People are baptized (rather than circumcised)
2. Jesus goes "**into Galilee**" (Jn 1:29-51), a more Gentile setting. "Rabbi, where do you live?" echoes newcomers. The Samaritan woman is definitely an outsider. There is the statement "I sent you to reap where you have not labored. Others have labored and ye into the labour of them having entered." (Jn 7:17). This is a reminder that the ground work in demonstrating moral standards had already been done by Diaspora Jews.
3. In Cana/Galilee the miracle of water made into wine, is a reminder of Gentile people converted. In the parallel Cana/Galilee paragraph, the arrival of a courtier suggests a Gentile household.
4. In the first instance in the fourth paragraph pair Jesus is with his disciples and members of his own family. But he does not stay long suggesting he is on the outer. The second scene tells of slaves meeting the courtier who wanted his son cured. Jews were not supposed to own slaves.
5. Jesus throws out the Temple traders and is now unwelcome there. Jesus performs a miracle and is considered to be breaking a law about work on the Sabbath day. He is now on the outer of Judaism.

6. Nicodemus is told he needs to be born again of water. The second paragraph of the pair is a reminder that the authority of Jesus exceeds that of Moses.

From a reading of 1 Corinthians, one could assume that people from a Gentile background would be somewhat "light" on obedience with regard to moral standards. Paul complained about Corinthian lack of respect for community leadership (1 Cor 9). Also, at the close of each paragraph pair in Section B, people are warned about the need to have faith and to respect authority cf:

1. "the one believing in the Son has life eternal. But the one disobeying the Son." (3:36)
2. "It is no longer because of you talking we believe. We have heard for ourselves.." (4:42)
3. "The man believed the word Jesus said to him." (4:54)
4. "He and his whole household believed" (4:53).
5. "the one hearing my word ... has passed out over death into life" (5:24).
6. "If you did not believe Moses how would you believe me?" (5:47).

For Gentile Christians, belief requires them to move beyond the rationalism of Greek philosophy. They need to believe that Jesus is both alive and authorised to lead

them. They need to trust Him. Thus while Section B portrays Jesus as the Living Authority of God, it also addresses Gentile converts in particular, about the need to follow Jesus.

On the other hand in Section C, it appears John is addressing Jewish Christians in particular. These people identified themselves as Jews first of all. John's criticism of these people is much harsher. A major theme developed in this Section is that the "Living Word" outweighs all the ritualistic observance of Mosaic rules and regulations. Section C suggests that historically, whatever the problems that Jewish Christians were having in accepting fellow Gentiles, they were also having problems accepting the full reality of Jesus Christ himself?

John's Section C

HEED CHARACTERISTICS OF THE LIVING WORD

John 6:1 - 13:1

Paragraph hooks are Locations

	Characteristic	Location	Location	Event
1.	Appeals to Crowd	across sea 6:1-14	across Jordan <i>10:40-42</i>	5,000 fed many believed
2.	Is sought after	mountain alone 6:15	remained in place <i>11:1-6</i>	to make king to get help
3.	Achieves goals	sea journey 6:16-21	journey to <i>11:7-37</i>	they arrive/ brother to rise

4.	Brings life	unbelief/ synagogue 6:22-71	Tomb <i>11:38-52</i>	words of life Lazarus new life
5.	Is doubted and outlawed	not Judea 7:1-13	not openly <i>11:53-57</i>	not believe/ to arrest
6.	Is aware of death threats	Temple (c/f home) 7:14-53	Bethany (c/f home) <i>12:1-11</i>	seek to kill/ day of burial
7.	as public witness	Into Jerusalem 8:1-19	Into Jerusalem <i>12:12-19</i>	True to witness/ Hosanna
8.	Is conscious of timing	Temple 8:20-58	In Temple <i>12:20-36</i>	Hour not come/ has come
9.	Light of the world	Jesus hidden 8:59 - 9:41	Jesus hidden <i>12:36-43</i>	blind man/ blinded of them
10	Is commanded by Father	I am the door 10:1-21	I..a light have come <i>12:44-50</i>	division/judgi ng
11	Speaks like a Shepherd	Porch Solomon 10:22 – 39		

Again, in order to verify whether or not Section C can come under the heading of “Heed Characteristics of the Living Word,” a closer look is being taken at the fourth, fifth and sixth paragraph pairs.

	1 st paragraph	2 nd paragraph	Event
4. Brings life	unbelief/ synagogue 6:22-71	Tomb 11:38-52	words of life Lazarus new life
Crowd belief “sent one” “What sign?” “I shall raise up” Murmurs and desertion One is to betray		Crowd belief “sent one” “Lazarus come out” Dead one came out Some told Pharisees One is to die	
5. Is doubted and outlawed	not Judea 7:1-13	not openly 11:53-57	not believe/ to arrest
Jews seek to kill Feast of Tabernacles Brothers not believe Brothers went up “Where is he?” Murmuring about him No one spoke openly		That they might kill Feast of Passover ... Many went up They sought Jesus Said to one another Order to inform on him	
6. Is aware of .death threats	Temple (c/f home) 7:14-53	Bethany (c/f home) 12:1-11	seek to kill/ day of burial
Middle of feast Marvellous teaching “judge justly” Seeking to kill him Attendants don’t arrest Nicodemus disparaged		Before 6 day feast Lazarus at supper Mary anoints feet Judas about to betray Mary defended Plot to kill Lazarus	

(Note again that parallel points follow the same sequence)
 Section C has thirteen paragraph pairs. Implied references to Jewish Christians are as follows:

	First Paragraph in Pair Implied reference to Jews	Second Paragraph in Pair Implied reference to Jews
1.	People see Jesus as a prophet (a Jewish expectation)	They were familiar with John the Baptist
2.	People wanted a king (a Jewish aspiration)	Mention of the family of Lazarus with long-term connections
3.	Fear re taking Jesus on board (conflict with their Jewish heritage?)	(Jewish) people associated with the family of Lazarus
4.	“The Jews murmured about him.”	Betrayal of Jesus to Pharisees
5.	Brothers of Jesus do not believe him	People seeking purification (cf. Jews)
6.	“Is he about to teach the Greeks?”-distinct from Jews	A great crowd of Jews
7.	Reference to Pharisees (Jews)	Reference to Pharisees (Jews)
8.	“having believed him Jews”	“unless the grain of wheat falling into the ground dies” (need to give up customs)
9.	“they took up stones” (cf. “blasphemy”)	“We heard out of the (Jewish) law”
10.	“We of Moses are disciples”	“Even of the (Jewish) rulers many believed”
11.	"Until when the life of us holdest thou?" (reflects uncertainty)	(It appears that Jesus has gone because of non-acceptance by the Jews)

On reading the text it is hard to see how exchanges as bitter as those recorded in the gospel text would be conducted with the ordinary Jews within Judaism. One should be able to assume that in the time of John and even at the time of Jesus, many mainstream Jews may have preferred to get on with their lives and forget about the Christian message. Why therefore would these accusations be hurled at them. Rather the arguments with “the Jews” are with those in John’s community who identify as Jews first of all. It appears that arguments with them are so bitter because this has bearing on the very survival of the emerging Church.

Thus on the major level of the text John the writer is presenting Jesus as the Living Word. At the secondary level of the text he is confronting community members with a Jewish background, who are wavering about continuing to follow Jesus. At the time of John they were eroding the base of unity within the church. The underlying tension in John’s gospel about acceptance of Jesus gains momentum at both levels in the text. It appears this reaches a climax in point eleven. Those who cleave to their Jewish background undercut the full, living reality of Jesus. They are attempting to "kill" him (cf. Jn 7:1).

A Following of Jesus Offers More

If we go through the paragraph pairs of Section C again, in order to pick up on the undercurrents, we find there are points made to argue that Jesus offers something beyond what is offered by Judaism on its own. Consider

1. In the first paragraph pair one is reminded of God raining manna from heaven so Moses could feed

the chosen people. Here Jesus feeds the people directly.

2. One is reminded of the great tradition of kingship within Judaism. But Jesus flees those who want to make him a political king.
3. Salvation history placed great store on God parting the waters of the Red Sea for Moses and the chosen people. But Jesus walks over the top of the sea.
4. Elijah the great prophet brought a child back to life by stretching over the top of the child (1 Kings 17:17-24). But Jesus could command a dead person to come out of their tomb four days after burial.
5. Dispersed Jews (and Jewish Christians?) tried to attend both festivals of Tabernacles and Passover. But Jesus decided it was appropriate to stay away.
6. Observance of Sabbath rest was a key law of Judaism. But Jesus was ready to cure a maimed man on that day.
7. In Jewish law, the penalty for adultery was death by stoning. But Jesus refused to apply the law's penalty.
8. Jews (and Jewish Christians?) identified themselves as descendants of Abraham. But Jesus claimed to be greater than Abraham.
9. Jews (and Jewish Christians?) treasured the heritage of the Temple tradition even after it had gone. But Jesus deliberately went out of the temple.

10. Jews (and Jewish Christians?) claimed a blind man had been punished for sin. But Jesus broke the cycle of apparent guilt and enabled him to see.

11. Jews (and Jewish Christians?) put highest value on their observance of law. But Jesus put greatest value on doing the work of the Father.⁹⁴

One might wonder why so much focus is being put here, in this research project, on John's concern, that both Gentile Christians and Jewish Christians should focus on a following of Jesus. However this fits with the major content of the research project. Much of the material presented above demonstrates how, at a sociological level, Christianity is based on Judaism and Hellenism. These have a distinct difference in their world views. The one has an emphasis on time, the other has an emphasis on place. A logical question has to arise as to how people with such divergent world views can be held together in the one socially organic community. At the turn of the first century, John was facing this same question about unity.

Further reflection could be given as to why Jewish Christians appear to be addressed more harshly in the gospel than the Gentile Christians. One could re-consider the basic symbol of Christianity, that is, the cross or its more detailed presentation of the crucifix. At the sociological level it could be argued that a cross represents the two societies (law and order) that Christianity is based upon. They are in a dialectical tension with each other. The down beam represents Judaism with its roots in the laws of nature, history, morality and time. The cross beam represents the Gentile world with its mode of rationalism

⁹⁴ Nailon, *Five Pivotal Texts*, 256-272.

and its outreach and openness and effort to impose order in the “now”. It is the down beam (c/f a society based upon law) that supports the cross beam (c/f a society based upon order). Within Christianity the law-based group of people with their 'fixture' into the reality of time, need to support their more free-wheeling 'cousins'. If the law/time/family-based section of a community wavers and/or it closes out their “free-wheeling cousins , then the hybrid society fails. It appears the writer of John’s gospel considers that the full “conversion” of Jewish Christians is more urgent and he is confronting them about this. In the crucifix image of Christianity, Jesus Christ is holding the two beams together.

The “bottom line” of John’s Sections B and C is that the followers of Jesus, whatever their background, need to take on the person of Jesus. John’s Section D shows a process of identification with Jesus. This could be described as a “child” section of the gospel and according to the underlying “grammar” of the gospels its paragraphing does not need to follow a pattern.



Section D

CHALLENGE TO IDENTIFY WITH THE AUTHORISED, LIVING WORD

Step One Challenge to identify with the Living Word -
13:1-14:31

Paragraph hooks are Questions

Questioner	Ref	Question	Answer
1. Simon Peter	13:1-17	Wash my feet?	Wash feet of each other
2. Beloved disciple	13:18-30	Who is it?	Who receives you receives me
3. Simon Peter	13:31-38	Where do you go?	Love one another as I loved you
4. Thomas	14:1-7	How do we know way?	Where I am ye also may be
5. Philip	14:8-21	Show us the Father?	..works I do, believing one will do
6. Judas (not Iscariot)	14:22-31	Why show yourself to us?	...the word of me he will keep "name of me" (14:26)

Section E

ALLOW THE AUTHORISED LIVING WORD TO SET DIRECTION

John 18:1 - 20:30

Paragraph hooks are Persons told to do Something

	Person(s)	Direction	Direction for future	Name for Jesus
1	Judas and crowd	Allow them to go <i>18:1-9</i>	c/f legal rights	Jesus Nazarene
2	Peter	Put sword into sheath <i>18:10-12</i>	c/f non-violence	Jesus
3	Annas	Question those who have heard <i>18:13-27</i>	c/f NB witness	(not same as Peter)
4	Pilate	Hear voice of truth <i>18:28-40</i>	c/f philosophical base	Witness to truth
5	Crowd	Behold the man <i>19:1-16</i>	c/f humanity of Jesus	the man
6	Soldiers	Scripture fulfilled <i>19:16-24</i>	c/f fulfil Scripture	King of the Jews
7	Mother	Behold the son of thee <i>19:25-26</i>	c/f children of church	Jesus
8	Beloved Disciple	Behold the mother of thee <i>19:27-30</i>	c/f 'way' of the child	Jesus
9	Arimathea	(Take initiative) <i>19:31-42</i>	c/f care for	Him (c/f

			body of Jesus	Scripture)
10	Magdalene	go to brothers and tell <i>20:1-18</i>	c/f support leadership	Rabboni
11	Disciples	Peace, go, receive H.S. <i>20:19-23</i>	c/f sacrament of penance	The Lord
12	Thomas	Be faithful <i>20:24-30</i>	c/f priority of faith	My Lord and My God

SECTION F

EPILOGUE

Chapter 21

An Overall Water Image and the Need for a Following of Jesus

John's emphasis on the need to follow and identify with Jesus is demonstrated in an overall "water" image that stretches across the gospel via an extended concentric circle. Consider the following



WATER CAMEO CIRCLE A BOAT AND ITS DESTINATION

1. 1:26 Immersion in water (Initiation to mission)
2. Ch 2 Jesus serves meal using water (to make wine)
3. Ch 3 Nicodemus taught re new birth through water
4. Ch 4 "I thirst" plea to Samaritan woman
5. 4:11 "pail" mentioned for collecting water
6. 5:2 Pool of Bethsaida sign
7. 6:1 Sea of Tiberias
(cf. Emperor claim to divinity)
8. 6:19 Walks on water "I am"
/ destination gained
7. 7:38 Rivers of living water
(cf. claim re living God)
6. 9:8 Pool of Siloam sign
5. 13:8 "bowl" mentioned re vinegar
4. 19:28 "I thirst" plea on cross
3. 19:34 Water from side of Christ symbolises
new birth of Church
2. 21:1 Jesus serves meal using water (to obtain fish)
1. 21:7 Immersion in water (Initiation to mission)

The central picture here is that of Jesus walking on water. This is not the first time a gospel writer uses the image of Jesus walking on water as a "central" point. If we look back to the semiotic analysis of Mark's Section B, we find it located in the central paragraph in a set of paragraph pairs that point to the importance of a sense of direction for an "order-based" society (Mark 6:45-52). In Matthew, his

lengthy Section D is about an Environment of Internalised Law. The middle paragraph here is also about the same incident of walking on water (Mt. 14:22-33).

Consider more closely what is happening in the mid-point of the water concentric circle above in John 6:19. The disciples are in a boat tossed by the waves. At a metaphoric level this could describe the early Church in the Greco-Roman Empire. People are fearful about their fate. Then Jesus comes towards them walking on the water. It is when they opt to take him on board that they immediately reach their destination.

Note how even here in this central verse, the inter-face continues to be shown between time and place. It is “when” they make a decision to take Jesus on board and act on this that they immediately reach their destination. One wonders if historically, there was some kind of warp in time and place that took place in this event. In any case the point is made that by taking Jesus on board people will “immediately” reach their destination as a church and as a society.

John also clarifies who it is the disciples are “taking on board”. Jesus identifies himself as “It is I” (Jn. 6:20). In the context of other *ego eimi* references in the gospel this identifies Jesus in turn with the “I am” of creation.⁹⁵

⁹⁵ P. Harner, *The “I Am” of the fourth gospel* (Philadelphia: Fortress, 1970), 48.

C A SUMMING UP

Parts 1 and 2 of

Is Christian Morality Unique?

Part One of this project isolated out the three commandments of “Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal” as being at the base of Christian morality. Within Christianity the bar of these three commandments has been raised so people are challenged to avoid cruelty as such, avoid uncommitted sex, and avoid unjust business practices. In the practice of this approach, Jesus demonstrated that Christians are challenged to go further. They should help all people by empowering them with health and self-determination. They are challenged to support and enrich family social structures. They are challenged to provide and distribute material supports. Actually in Western Society today, with its Judaic-Christian foundations, its industries are geared towards these ends.

Towards the end of Part One *Is Christian Morality Unique?* it briefly considered how the focus on money, power and relationship is summed up and publicly reflected in the vows of Religious Life. It then briefly considered how other world religions also have an emphasis on the need for restraint in the areas of money, power and sex. This led to questions about whether or not Christianity is so unique after all.

Part Two of *Is Christian Morality Unique?* has attempted to answer the question that was raised at the end of Part One. It pointed out that it is not just the emphasis on the commandments of “Thou shalt not kill, commit adultery or steal” that mark out Christian morality as being unique.

Rather the practice of this morality is energized by the dialectical tension between its two differing world views and emphases on time and place. As mentioned a number of times above, these emphases have their roots in the culture of Judaism and in the culture of the Hellenism of Greek Philosophy.

The great contribution made by Judaism has been the realization that God, the source of creation, is a moral God. Hellenism's great contribution is the realization that at the base of the universe there is a pattern of order.

In Part Two of *Is Christianity Unique?* it has been shown that by using a semiotic analysis and a sociological approach, Mark's gospel sets out an introductory overview of the two societies of Judaism and Hellenism. Matthew has a focus on the Judaic roots of Christianity. Luke's gospel shows that Christianity has incorporated the philosophy of Hellenism as well.

However, there is also an on-going question about the credibility of a semiotic analysis using a sociological approach. Despite its endorsement by the Catholic Pontifical Commission there is still the tendency to sideline it from mainstream interpretations of the gospels.

With these factors in mind a précis has been presented of the philosopher Gadamer's *Truth and Method*. Gadamer has challenged the post Enlightenment tendency to pressure human sciences into following the narrower methods of natural science. He points out natural sciences are only a part of human sciences rather than the other way around. His arguments in *Truth and Method* help to justify the use of semiotic analysis in this research project as being within the mainstream of "human sciences".

Although Gadamer barely mentions historical critical

exegesis, the underlying argument of his book provides a critique of this dominant method of Scripture interpretation and its objectifying approach as a “natural science”. The book endorses a broader, “human sciences” approach to the interpretation of Scripture.

As regards the “unifying” presence of Jesus Christ within Christianity, Gadamer’s book actually provides a philosophical understanding that can be of use here even if “Jesus Christ” is not explicitly mentioned. Gadamer explains the existence of a “living tradition and its moral authority” within society. This is expressed through “anonymous intentionality”. He also explains the existence of “the living word”.

These reflections provide a philosophical introduction to similar same themes as shown up in a semiotic analysis of the gospel of John. In the underlying structure of John’s gospel, people of both world views are challenged to follow and identify with the person of Jesus. The Living Authority of Jesus encompasses the living tradition of people enacting God’s will. The Living Word, Jesus, incorporates the truth about reality as expressed in language. When people identify with this Living Authority and Living Word at this cosmic level they can become the “adult child” who can enter the Kingdom of Jesus.



was “sidelined” into a subject area that is barely if at all, dealt with in Melbourne Australia.

However the Professor did have a point. At present New Testament Studies are so dominated by the Historical, Critical Exegetical method of interpretation that one could argue they are equated with the method. This fits into “natural sciences”. A semiotic analysis with a sociological approach on the other hand, fits into the category of “human sciences”. In this sense it does appear to fit with Sociology of Religion rather than New Testament Studies.

But this leads to anomalies. The domination of New Testament Studies by “natural sciences” means that someone can do a research project on for example, the excavation of Gladiators of the first century CE, or a study of Josephus a first century CE historian. They can thereby claim relevance to first century history and New Testament Studies. Yet the studies may barely mention the Gospel texts. On the other hand someone can do an analysis which includes every single verse of the gospel texts. But this is not New Testament Studies!

In the current stress on a scientific “accuracy” in the essays relating to New Testament studies broader details of interpretation are “corrected”. One is told:

- a parallel between the carrying of the cross by Simon and the carrying of Jesus by a donkey is not a ‘real’ parallel
- the “give me a drink” of Jesus’ request to the Samaritan woman is not a ‘real’ parallel with his “I thirst” statement on the cross

- the inverted circle of paragraphs that centre on the ointment woman in the Gospel of Mark is based on “conjecture”
- It is not likely the journal editors would accept articles about concentric circles in the gospels because these are “out of fashion”.

and so on.

Sandra Schneider, in her book *The Revelatory Text, Interpreting the New Testament as Sacred Scripture* points out the need for a hermeneutics for gospel interpretation.⁹⁶ Experiences related to the above research project show the need is still there.

2. Understanding the History of Christianity

Over the centuries of Christianity, there has been an on-going “interplay” between a social emphasis on time and a social emphasis on place. It is not surprising that a world view based on time tends to be weak on the sense of place. A “place world view” tends to be weak on the sense of time.

An implication of the above research project is that these two world views could be taken into consideration more when conflict within Christianity arises.

⁹⁶ Sandra Schneider *The Revelatory Text: Interpreting the New Testament as Sacred Scripture*, 2nd edition (Collegeville Minnesota: A Michael Glazier Book, The Liturgical Press, 1999), 12.

It might be argued that both of the world views complement each other. But such inter-connection has never been easy. Consider the New Testament itself. In the first chapters in Acts for instance we are told how “the Hebrews” would not include “the Gentiles” in their community meal (Acts: 6:1). We also find how Paul was struggling against Gentile converts of Corinth who had slipped back too easily into the snobbery and lax morality of paganism (1 Cor. 6:5-7). We also find Paul, the first ‘Christian Theologian’ was struggling against people in Galatia who claimed to be followers of Jesus but who remained firmly fixed in their Jewish world view and practices (Gal 2:4). The gospel writers Matthew and John also show their frustration with people who were “stuck” in the rituals of Judaism.

If we move forward a few centuries, we find how an oscillation between these two world views has continued. For centuries Greek philosophy had been obscured within Christianity. But with the Crusades of the C 12th, Greek manuscripts with Greek philosophy were rediscovered. The re-discovery triggered the Renaissance (1300 to 1600). With the re-discovery came the Protestant Reformation (1516 to 1648) which reasserted a Hellenistic approach to culture and Christianity.

Actually at the time, Greek philosophy in Christianity had already been continuing on within the teachings of Augustine. But Church leadership had not realised this. For instance *The New Catholic Encyclopaedia* explains:

The intellectual influence of Augustine dominated the west through the C 12th ...But it must be noted that this theological synthesis had assimilated much of Neoplatonism. Many C 13th theologians viewed with alarm

the newly re-emerging Aristotelianism for they thought it incompatible with any number of revealed truths.”⁹⁷

They had not recognised the Neo-Platonism (and Greek philosophy) in Augustine.

An emerging Hellenistic “world view” in the Renaissance with its stress on rationalism, challenged the traditional Church which had slipped into a “mechanistic” system of sacramental graces, for example through the promotion of indulgences. With the advent of printing (1439) people now had direct access to the Scriptures. Their own interpretation of Scripture was possible.

In the centuries to follow, the Protestantism that emerged from the Renaissance was largely based on the philosophy of Plato. Catholics on the other hand, defined their own position in terms of the *Summa Theologiae* of Aquinas which was actually based on Aristotle.⁹⁸ The tensions between Plato, with his emphasis on idealism and Aristotle with his emphasis on potentiality were played out yet again about two thousand years after these two people had co-existed for twenty years in Plato’s school in Athens in C. 5th BCE.⁹⁹

Overall in the conflict, Catholics were more aligned with their Jewish roots. Protestantism was more aligned with Hellenism. In retrospect, the Reformation posed a threat to the traditional church. However it also triggered the Catholic Council of Trent (1545-63) which helped eliminate much of the corruption which, over the centuries, had crept into the church.

⁹⁷ - *New Catholic Encyclopaedia Supplement 2012-13: Ethics and Philosophy Vol 1*, 141.

⁹⁸ Broderick, *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, 578.

⁹⁹ *New Catholic Encyclopaedia, Vol 1*, 8-10.

The above research project shows how both sides of Christianity, the Catholic and Protestant positions have their roots in the gospels.

3. Understanding the Catholic Church before and after Vatican II

From the time of the Reformation and up until Vatican II, there were two clearly defined world views to be found within Christianity. There was Catholicism, which continued on from the Middle Ages with its traditions, lines of authority and emphasis on law and ritual. There was Protestantism in its many forms, with an emphasis on individual conscience, individual reading of Scripture and involvement in establishing secular order.

If we consider the Catholicism in the years prior to the Vatican II Council of the 1960's, we can also see how this type of society had tended, yet again, to slip into an over-emphasis on external law. Perhaps such an over-emphasis was no more apparent than in the rules and regulations that governed Religious Institutes and in particular their novitiates. These places had many positives. But they could also be described as training grounds for mechanistic obedience. Examples of over-regulation in the traditional novitiate are as follows.

The every day life of the novice was governed down to the smallest detail. For instance, within the first twenty minutes of getting up a novice could be expected to observe about forty regulations. There were rules about how the novice was to get out of bed cf. "the ideal novice would leap out of the bed at the first sound of the bell".¹⁰⁰ There were rules about stripping back the bed and re-making it. There were rules about how to

¹⁰⁰ N.Metuchen, *Manual for Novices* (US: Brothers of the Sacred Heart, 1960).

wash, dress, walk, be silent in action etc. During the day there were rules about when the novices could speak, who they could speak to and what subjects they had to avoid. They were taught that their Superior, together with all the rules they were expected to obey, were the expression of God's will for them.

Arguably an upshot of this tightly regulated lifestyle was that people were more focussed upon the observance of rules and regulations rather than they were upon the development of their own personal maturity and morality. This sort of "mechanistic" morality was actually picked up by Jesus himself in the gospel when He challenged the Pharisees for dedicating their property to God. According to Pharisaic rules they thereby avoided having to support their parents (Mark 7:117). A danger with mechanistic obedience and the belief that all of these rules encompassed God's will, meant that people's moral compass could become embedded in the keeping of rules and regulations. With the coming of Vatican II and the cancellation of a "ruled" way of life, so it could be argued, was the moral compass of too many.

Vatican II (1962-65) brought a dramatic "about turn" in the church. Many of the insights of the Protestant traditions were now applied to the Catholic Church. The rationalism of a Hellenistic type of society was now endorsed. New emphasis was given to the exercise of one's own conscience and the development of maturity and personal fulfilment. People who for years had been discouraged and disciplined out of exercising initiative, were suddenly told to use this. Tragically for many, the maturity and initiative was not there! Many people felt lost. In the early 1970 's there was a "wave" of nervous breakdowns in Religious Life!

There was also a shift in the understanding of who the "follower of Jesus" should be. Status once given to the "disciple" in a closely knit, spirituality-focused community was now downgraded. People were no longer living a

“common life”. In the imagery of Luke’s gospel (Section E), emphasis was given instead to the individualised Kingdom Figure, out there in the world, seeking justice for themselves and for all. There was no longer a ‘womb like’ environment where other people could be “discipled” as especially, in the institutional boarding school. Recall that at the end of Matthew’s gospel, Jesus had urged his disciples to go out into the world and “disciple” others (Mark 7:11); In this command there was the urging to “go out”. But there was still the emphasis on being part of the group.

After Vatican II the “bottom fell out” of the numbers of people who were seeking membership of Religious Orders. Many of the Religious Institutes in the Western world now face extinction. Perhaps this has especially been the case with women’s orders.

The above Research Project sheds some light on the oscillation that has taken place.

4. Respect for the Body of Christ as practised in the Eucharist

What has happened to the “Lay” Catholics before and after the Council? If we look back to the second last section in John and use the semiotic analysis provided above, it is suggested there is an outline of what a society should look like when it is influenced by the “living authority” and the “living word” of the cosmic Christ. Using the paragraph “hook” of persons being told to do something, we find the following list of attributes.

(Gospel of John)**Section E****Allow the Authorised, Living Word to set Direction**

Direction for the future would include:

- legal rights
- Non-violence
- The status of witnesses
- A philosophical base
- Recognition of the humanity of Jesus
- Fulfilment of Scripture
- Child-like qualities for those in the church
- The ‘way’ of the child
- Care for the body of Jesus
- Support for leadership
- The sacrament of penance
- The priority of faith

Going through the above list, it appears as expected, that these factors are largely present in a society where a faith community is respected and free. However, one attribute that may appear to be out of place is “Care for the body of Jesus” (Jn 19:38-42). In the gospel the paragraph that this point comes from is about Joseph of Arimathea. After the passion and death of Jesus, he goes to Pilate and asks for the body of Jesus. He then puts it in his own newly made tomb. Surely such an action is about “caring for the body of Jesus”.

At the same time the paragraph actually has bearing on a whole underlying theme of John’s gospel. There is a need for the followers of Jesus to not only follow him but also to identify with him. In the early Church (and in the centuries to follow) the key liturgical practice where such an identification has taken place is in the celebration of the Eucharist. People

have shared in the Eucharistic presence of Jesus in the consecrated bread and wine.

If the Christian community, especially the Catholic community, is to continue as a viable community into the future, one could expect that priority needs to be given to the celebration of Mass. In this way “care for the body of Jesus” is continued.

However as the saying goes “people are people”. Christians have a tendency to veer from the extremes of one type of society to the extremes of the other. So, just as there can be an over-stress on external law, people can flip over into an over-stress on idealism. Therefore “care for the body of Jesus” is not as simple as it may sound.

Looking back to the 1960’s, with the conduct and aftermath of the Vatican II Council, much of the scholarship of Protestantism was then applied in the Catholic church. But in the Catholic Church there was a different situation. On the one hand in Protestant circles, people would study Scripture and go through a careful process of rationalisation and research in order to reach their own individual convictions about both Scripture and morality. However prior to Vatican II, Catholics in general only read small sections of translated Scripture when they were attending the weekly Latin Mass. They rarely put a focus on Scripture in their on-going education but relied instead on the Magisterium of the Church for its interpretation. They also relied on Church rules for direction about their personal morality. These rules included regular attendance at Mass.

In Australia all Catholic children were required to memorise the “Penny Catechism”. This included the exhortation to accept Church rules, for example:

138. Are we bound to obey the commandments made by the Church?

Yes we are bound to obey all the commandments of the Church

140. What are the principal commandments of the Church?

The principal commandments of the Church are:

To hear Mass on Sundays and Holy days of obligation (etc).¹⁰¹

A common interpretation of the above teaching was that Catholics who did not attend Sunday Mass would go to hell.

Besides the imperative about attending Sunday Mass there was also a mechanistic and ‘superlative’ understanding of the Mass cf.

This oblation made by Jesus and the Church is of infinitely greater importance than all other acts of worship, infinitely greater than all actions, even the most heroic of the saints, for all these prayers, all these virtues, all these merits, when they are put together are limited, while those of Calvary are super abundant.¹⁰²

Arguably, prior to Vatican II, Catholics had in many ways been “trained” out of a mature approach to their faith. They

¹⁰¹ 4th Plenary Council, 1937 *Catechism for General Use in Australia* (Melbourne: Australian Catholic Truth Society, 1937), 33.

¹⁰² Dom Gaspar Lefebvre, *How to understand the Mass: Liturgical Manuel*, trans. The Grail (Belgium: Venhave SSQ, 1938), 3.

Note: This book was not written by the Cardinal Lefebvre who defected from the church over changes in the Mass though the two approaches are similar.

were told to “Do this or else!” After Vatican II it was hard for them to suddenly take on the “mature” approach to their faith that was now required. It appeared that stress was now being put on “loving, caring and sharing” rather than on dogma.¹⁰³

The Vatican II shift affected compliance with the laws of the Church including those about Sunday Mass. One can attend a Sunday Mass where there is not a single school aged child in the congregation. Yet there could be five hundred students in the Primary and Secondary Schools that adjoin the Church yard. The question can also be asked “Where are the parents and teachers?” A teacher in one country parish put forward the explanation, “The Mass is only for old people.” (!)

There is an anomaly here between what people say they believe about the presence of “the body of Jesus” at the Eucharist and what they fail to do in practice.

After Vatican II some people, for example Cardinal Lefebvre, claimed that changes to the Mass rendered it invalid. Implicitly many now unchurched Catholics also endorse this view. In retrospect, it seems that the Church took away one understanding of the Mass with Vatican II. But the understanding of Eucharist put in its place (if any), has been inadequate.

In the presentation and defence of the gospel analysis presented above there are some pointers to an understanding of who “the body of Jesus” actually is. Arguably the analysis of John’s Section B fits with the philosophy of Gadamer who explains an “organic” unity between the “anonymous intentionality” expressed by people within history and over time. When this intentionality accords with the moral will of God, it would be aligned with the presence of Jesus who is the Living Authority of God.

¹⁰³ Note: This was a favourite saying of a school Principal nun in the 1960’s.

The idea of the living will of God being passed on from one generation to the next, can be found in the text of the Mass itself. The Mass for the Deceased says:

In baptism he (she) died with Christ, may he (she) also share his resurrection with Mary, the Virgin Mother of God, and the apostles, and with all the saints who have done your will throughout the ages.¹⁰⁴

Gadamer has also provided a philosophical base for the understanding of a “living word” which stretches across all languages. The analysis of John’s Section C about the Living Word arguably fits with this. People who express the truth also share in the presence of the Living Word.

Such reflections may make some contribution to an improved understanding of Eucharist.

5. Understanding Gospel Values

At the start of this project *Is Christian Morality Unique?* it was pointed out that there is a problem with interpretation of the gospels when trying to sort out an answer to this question. At the end of the first part of the research project, it was suggested the uniqueness of Christian morality does not simply lie with its stress on trying to control money, power and sex within a society. Other world religions and philosophies have similar emphases.

In Part Two of the Research Project it has been shown there is a dialectical tension at the base of Christian society. This

¹⁰⁴ Eucharistic Prayer II, *Weekday Mass Readings and Order of Mass* (Melbourne: Pellegrini, 1972), p.515.

provides a unique energy for its expression of morality. Christian morality is not based on a single ethnic group. Nor does it rest with intellectualism. It is based on the norms of both Judaism and Hellenism. In order to hold together the two diverging world views involved here, focus is put upon a unifying identification with Jesus Christ. He is both the Living Authority and the Living Word of God. . A key structural image in 6:21 of the John's gospel points out, "When they took Jesus on board, immediately they reached their destination."

The "sweeping" overview of the gospels as provided above, can provide a key in itself, towards understanding the dynamics of Christian morality. Instead of people with the one viewpoint "hurling" accusations at those who think differently, the analysis above should help people to see the validity of both positions. They are challenged to "identify" with both positions.

6. The Roles of Time and Place

In the analysis presented above there is an emphasis on the roles of "time" and "place". Too often the extent to which these two things affect people's basic thinking can be taken for granted. This research project may help people to be more mindful of their own underlying leaning.

The interplay of time and place also has cosmic dimensions. The interplay between the two as demonstrated above puts the Christian dynamic at the centre of an evolving awareness of the social and physical environment around us and a concern for these.

B INADEQUACIES OF THIS RESEARCH PROJECT

Questions that could not be covered in this project include the following:

1. The co'existence of different approaches to New Testament Studies.
2. What has happened to religious Orders after Vatican II?
2. Can Church Law be enforced?
3. What is the future role of the Eucharist?
4. How does the "disciple" figure fit with the "Kingdom Figure"?
5. How does present Western society fit with the sociology of the gospels?

The major focus of this research project has been to demonstrate that a hybrid of two societies exists at the base of Christianity. Within the limitations of the project there has not been scope to simply assume the existence of the hybrid and then tease out the ramifications of this. But ramifications there have been and still are. Some of these are as follows.

1. The Co'existence of different approaches to New Testament Studies.

In the present project the “natural sciences” approach of historical, critical exegesis was used in Part One. The “human sciences” approach of a sociological approach in semiotic analysis was used in Part Two. In a sense both approaches “co-exist” in this project. However there has not been an exploration in these pages as to how the two approaches can co-exist in say, a three thousand word essay or journal article. One does not for example find mathematical equations or chemical experiments described in a subject on English Literature. So a question as to how to align the two approaches has not been answered.

2. What happened to Religious Orders after Vatican II?

The Vatican II Council described Religious as a “blazing emblem of the heavenly kingdom”.¹⁰⁵ However outcomes of the Council pressured “the Religious”, especially those in Active Orders, into changing from the “disciple” persona of Matthew’s gospel to the “kingdom figure” persona of the gospel of Luke.

As a result of this, at the ground level, many Religious and clerics felt they would be more effective as a Christian if they left the community of “disciples” and they struck out into the “world” in the style of the “Kingdom Figure”. It seems this

¹⁰⁵ Vatican II Council, “Decree on the Appropriate Renewal of the Religious Life, in *The documents of Vatican II*, Gen. Ed., Walter M. Abbott (London-Dublin: Geoffrey Chaptin, 1966), 466.

same mentality has reached into Catholicism as a whole. Would-be postulants for Religious Life have believed they can practice their Christianity more effectively as individuals within the world rather than from within the community of a Religious Order. As a result of this many orders now face extinction. Such extinction has and will have effects on the Church at the local level. The public presence of Religious has offered an on-going challenge to the morality of the laity. Religious Life is rooted in a “law-based” society with their vows of poverty (cf. money), chastity (cf. sex) and obedience (cf. power). The flexibility of Religious means they have been able to cut across cultures while cultivating and presenting their own counter culture. Their demise is “everybody’s” business.

The above research project dealt with the tensions that exist between the “disciple” and the “kingdom figure” but offering a solution about their co’existence is much more difficult.

3. Can Church Law be enforced?

In the secular sphere of law, discipline is maintained, for example amongst road users, via a system of penalties. Arguably the Catholic Church has had a tendency to slip into similar “balance sheets” of penalties with regards to rewards and punishments. In the sixteenth century for instance Martin Luther objected to the system of indulgences that exempted people from the penalties of sin, if and when they gave donations to the building of St Peter’s in Rome. Later on, in the C20th, it seems the Church had again slipped into a “profit and loss” mode of thinking about penalties. Children were taught if they missed Mass on a Sunday they would suffer forever in the burning fires of hell. They had to go to confession to “adjust” their “balance sheet”.

After Vatican II with the avoidance of such threats about accountability, the church has needed to explain the negative effects relating to the non-observance of its rules. But how can it do this?

4. What is the role of the Eucharist?

A fourth inadequacy of this research project is its failure to follow through with the implications of the above analysis and the light that it throws on the celebration of the Eucharist.

This is a central focal point for the Catholic Church. However according to some estimates, between the time of before and after Vatican II, attendance at Mass on a Sunday dropped from about 74% of Catholics to about 13% in 2006.¹⁰⁶

Accompanying the decline in attendance has been the virtual disappearance of any sense of obligation to attend Mass among the non-attending Catholics.¹⁰⁷

Arguably the understanding of a Cosmic Christ as the “Authorised, Living Word” of God could be further developed.

5. How does the “disciple” figure fit with the “Kingdom Figure”?

This research project has not been able to explore further the comparisons and contrasts between the people who continue to align themselves with the “disciple” of Matthew’s gospel and

¹⁰⁶ Stephen Reid, Robert Dixon, Noel Connolly, *See I am Doing a New Thing*, (Armadale: Catholic Religious Australia, 2009).

¹⁰⁷ Reid, *See I am Doing a New Thing...*, 44.

those who think of themselves as the “kingdom figure” of the gospel of Luke.

While both personas are endorsed by the gospels, there is a difference here. What are the dynamics between these figures? Does the one figure tend to “pick” on the other? Is the one persona type more important and more basic than the other? As mentioned above we are reminded here of the down-beam of the cross upon which the side beam of the cross is resting. There are two beams in the cross but the first one supports the second.

Actually in the “grammar” underlying the logico-semantic level of the gospel texts there is the mention of Judaism and/or what it implies before the mention of Hellenism. This “grammar” is even repeated in the key phrase in John 6:21 when we are told after welcoming Jesus on board the disciples “immediately” (cf. time) reached where they were going (cf. destination and place). This same order of precedence is found today in common parlance. We talk about “law and order”. We don’t talk about “order and law”. We also say “time and place” rather than “place and time”. Also note how the words remain separate.

Are there implications here for individual “disciples” and “kingdom figures” in their daily interactions with each other? People who want to follow the basic morality rules about living without launching out into justice programs can be so easily disparaged. As one diocesan speaker said recently about young clerics who want to stick to the essentials of a bygone era, “I feel sorry for them.” Yet are these young clerics trying to master the morality essentials first of all?

6. How does present Western society fit with the sociology of the gospels?

The above research project argues that Christian Morality is unique because its focus on money, power and relationship is energised by the tension between the two world views of Judaism (cf. time) and Hellenism (cf. place). It was argued that tradition, with its understanding of dogmatics and morality, can and does adapt to a changing environment. The two world views can co-exist. However in the present environment one wonders if adaptation of tradition is fast enough to continue explaining the world? We live in a “now” type of society whether we want to do so or not.¹⁰⁸ Can we adjust and still retain our links with the wisdom of the past?

The urgency of this question challenges the dialectical uniqueness of Christian morality in the areas of:

- improved self-determination for all
(cf. “thou shalt not kill),
- improved social security for all
(cf. “thou shalt not commit adultery”) and
- increased productivity for all
(cf. “thou shalt not steal).

This research project can only point to such matters. An exercise still to be carried out would be to go through the list of industries in the *Australian Standard Industrial Classification* (ASIC) and show how all of these industries relate to an “idealisation” of the commandments.

¹⁰⁸ Cf. Shelley Gare and Tanya Cooper, “The Pretenders” in *Good Weekend: The Age*, 25th May 2019 (Melbourne: Fairfax, 2019), 11-15.

BIBLIOGRAPHY FOR PART TWO

... *New Catholic Encyclopaedia Supplement 2012-13: Ethics and Philosophy Vol .* 141.

.... "Eucharistic Prayer II" In *Weekday Mass Readings and Order of Mass*. Melbourne: Pellegrini, 1972.

...*The Jerusalem Bible: New Testament*. Edited by Alexander Jones. London: Darton, Longman & Todd:, 1967.

4th Plenary Council, 1937. *Catechism for General Use in Australia/*. Melbourne: Australian Catholic Truth Society, 1937).

Alter, Robert. *The Art of Biblical Narrative*. New York: Basic Books c. 1981

Aquinas, Thomas. *Summa Theologiae*, I-II, q. 107, art. 4. (Venetiis:Cudebat Simon Occhi, 1787).`

Aristotle. *Politics and Athenian Constitution*. Edited and translated by John Warrington. London: J. M. Dent, E. P. Dutton, 1959.

Bacon, Benjamin. *Studies in Matthew*. London: Constable, 1930.

Bauer, David. *The Structure of Matthew's gospel: A Study in Literary Design*. Sheffield: Armond, 1988.

Beaulieu, Daniel. "Five Literary Devices in Hebrew Poetry." In <https://prezi.com/w4p3o7zrxa8e/5-literary-devices-in-hebrew-poetry>. San Francisco: Prezi company, May 2014.

Bock, Darrell L. "The Son of Man in Luke 5:24." In *Bulletin*

for Biblical Research 1. Winona Lake in: Eisenbrauns, 1991.

Broderick, Robert. *The Catholic Encyclopedia*. London: Nelson Publications, 1990. 194-5.

Bruce, F. F. "The Epistles of Paul." In *Peake's Commentary on the Bible*. Edited by Matthew Black. London: T. Nelson 1962.

Byrne, Brendan. *Galatians and Romans*. Collegeville: The Liturgical Press, 2012.

Cicero. *Letters to Atticus*. Edited by T. Page and W. Rouse. Translated by B. Winstedt. London: William Heineman, 1919.

Clark Wire, Antoinette. *The Case for Mark Composed in Performance*. In *Biblical Performance Criticism* 3. Eugene Oregon: Cascade Books, 2011.

Doyle, B.Rod. "Guide to Exegesis of a Text from a Pauline Letter" Edited by Rosemary Canavan. Melbourne: Catholic Theological College, c. 2016.

Ehrman, B. "Paul as Pastor." In *Yale Bible Studies Series*. New Haven, USA: Yale University.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pMVatCd_1xM [accessed march 2016].

Ernst Haenchen. *The Acts of the Apostles: A Commentary*. Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1971.

Fitzmyer, Joseph A. *The Biblical Commission's Document "The Interpretation of the Bible in the Church : text and commentary."* Roma: Editrice Pontificio Istituto Biblico, 1995.

Gadamer, Hans-Georg, *Truth and Method*. Translated by J. Weinsheimer and D. G. Marshall. London: Bloomsbury, 2013.

Gare, Shelley and Tanya Cooper. "The Pretenders" In *Good Weekend: The Age*, 25th May 2019. Melbourne: Fairfax, 2019.

Harrington, Daniel, J. *The Gospel of Matthew*. Collegeville, Minn: Liturgical Press, c. 1991.

Holladay, Carl R. *A Critical Introduction to the New Testament: Interpreting the Message and Meaning of Jesus Christ*. Nashville: Abingdon Press, 2005.

Kumar, Bahart. "Eight Essential Characteristics of Sociology" In <http://www.preservearticles.com/sociology/8-essential-characteristics-of-sociology/2509> . Preservearticles.com publisher. [accessed 1 August 2019].

Lawn, Chris. *Gadamer: A Guide for the Perplexed*. London: Continuum, 2006.

Lefebvre, Dom Gaspar. *How to understand the Mass: Liturgical Manuel*. Translated by The Grail. Belgium: Venhave, SSQ, 1938.

Luz, Ulrich. *New Testament Theology*. Translated by J. Bradford Robinson. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993.

McLuhan, Marshall. *The Medium is the Message*. UK: Penguin Books, 1967.

Meeks, Wayne A. "A Nazi New Testament Professor Reads His Bible: The Strange Case of Gerhard Kittel." In *The Idea of Biblical Interpretation: Essays in Honour of*

James L. Kugel. Edited by Hindy Najman and Judith H
Newman. Leiden: Boston: Brill, 2004, 513-541.

Metuchen, N. Manual for Novices. US: Brothers of the
Sacred Heart, 1960. .

Moloney, Francis. Mark, Storyteller, Interpreter, Evangelist.
Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson Publishers, c. 2004, ix.

_____. J. “The Gifts of the Holy Spirit.” In Melbourne
Catholic. (Dec. 2018). Edited by David Halliday. Melbourne:
Archbishop Peter A. Comensali, 2018.

Harner, P. The “I Am” of the fourth gospel. Philadelphia:
Fortress, 1970.

Murphy O’Connor, Jerome. St Paul’s Corinth. Collegeville,
Minnesota: Liturgical Press, c. 2002.

_____. Paul: A Critical Life. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1996.

Nailon, Michelle. Five Pivotal Texts. Melbourne: Project
Employment Inc., 2006.

_____. Is Christian Morality Unique? Part 1: A Focus on Money,
Power and Relationship (Melbourne: Project Employment
2018), www.realitysearch.com.au p.1 [accessed Oct 2019].

Neusner, Jacob. “Judaism in a time of crisis: Four responses to
the destruction of the second Temple.” In Judaism 21
(1972) 313-27.

[http://preteristarchive.com/Books/pdf/1980_jacoby_the-
destruction-of-jerusalem.pdf](http://preteristarchive.com/Books/pdf/1980_jacoby_the-destruction-of-jerusalem.pdf) [accessed September 2019].

Pontifical Biblical Commission. “The Interpretation of the
Bible in the Church.” In Origins, Vol 23, n. 29.

Washington: C. N. S., 1994.

Pope Francis, Rejoice and Be Glad: on the call to holiness in today's world. Encyclical Letter, 2018.

. “[Homily at Mass in Casa Santa Marta](#)”. In ‘L’Osservatore Romano. (12 November 2016). Edited by Andrea Mondo. Rome: Vatican City State,).

Powell, Mark Allan. What are They Saying About Luke? New York/ Mahwah: Paulist Press, 1990.

Reid, Stephen, Robert Dixon and Noel Connolly. See I am Doing a New Thing. Armadale: Catholic Religious Australia, 2009.

Senior, Donald. The Passion of Jesus in the Gospel of Mark. Wilmington, Del.: Michael Glazier, c. 1985.

_____. What are they Saying About Matthew. New York: Paulist Press, 1996.

Schneider, Sandra. The Revelatory Text: Interpreting the New Testament as Sacred Scripture. 2nd edition. Collegeville Minnesota: A Michael Glazier Book, The Liturgical Press, 1999.

Stegner, William Richard. “The Temptation Narrative: A Study in the Use of Scripture by Early Jewish Christians.” In Biblical Research 25, (1990) Edited by E Mason. Chicago: The Journal of the Society of Biblical Research..

Stevens, Ben. “When was the Gospel of John Written?” In <https://www.quora.com/When-was-the-Gospel-of-John-written?> Mountain Village, California: Quora Inc. [accessed 30th September 2019].

The R.S.V. Interlinear Greek-English New Testament. Translated by Alfred Marshall. Basingstoke: Marshall-Pickering, 1988.

Throckmorton, Burton H. Jr. *Gospel Parallels: A Synopsis of the First Three Gospels*. Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1979.

Toffler, Alvin. *Future Shock*. US: Random House, 1970.

Tzu, Lao. *Tao Te Ching*. London: Penguin Classics, 1963.

Vatican 11 Council. "Decree on the Appropriate Renewal of the Religious Life." In *The documents of Vatican II*. Edited in general by Walter M. Abbott. London-Dublin: Geoffrey Chaplin, 1966), 466.

Wikipedia.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Historical_Jewish_population_comparisons. [Accessed 30 September 2019].

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/World_War_II_casualties. [Accessed 30 September 2019].

Wilcockson, Michael. *A Student's Guide to A.S. Religious Studies*. UK: Rhinegold Publishing Limited, 2003.